# Serial Testing for Detection of Multilocus Genetic Interactions 

Zaid T. Al-Khaledi<br>University of Kentucky, zaidz80@gmail.com<br>Digital Object Identifier: https://doi.org/10.13023/etd.2019.168

Right click to open a feedback form in a new tab to let us know how this document benefits you.

## Recommended Citation

Al-Khaledi, Zaid T., "Serial Testing for Detection of Multilocus Genetic Interactions" (2019). Theses and Dissertations--Statistics. 37.
https://uknowledge.uky.edu/statistics_etds/37

This Doctoral Dissertation is brought to you for free and open access by the Statistics at UKnowledge. It has been accepted for inclusion in Theses and Dissertations--Statistics by an authorized administrator of UKnowledge. For more information, please contact UKnowledge@lsv.uky.edu.

## STUDENT AGREEMENT:

I represent that my thesis or dissertation and abstract are my original work. Proper attribution has been given to all outside sources. I understand that I am solely responsible for obtaining any needed copyright permissions. I have obtained needed written permission statement(s) from the owner(s) of each third-party copyrighted matter to be included in my work, allowing electronic distribution (if such use is not permitted by the fair use doctrine) which will be submitted to UKnowledge as Additional File.

I hereby grant to The University of Kentucky and its agents the irrevocable, non-exclusive, and royalty-free license to archive and make accessible my work in whole or in part in all forms of media, now or hereafter known. I agree that the document mentioned above may be made available immediately for worldwide access unless an embargo applies.

I retain all other ownership rights to the copyright of my work. I also retain the right to use in future works (such as articles or books) all or part of my work. I understand that I am free to register the copyright to my work.

## REVIEW, APPROVAL AND ACCEPTANCE

The document mentioned above has been reviewed and accepted by the student's advisor, on behalf of the advisory committee, and by the Director of Graduate Studies (DGS), on behalf of the program; we verify that this is the final, approved version of the student's thesis including all changes required by the advisory committee. The undersigned agree to abide by the statements above.

Zaid T. Al-Khaledi, Student<br>Dr. Richard Charnigo, Major Professor<br>Dr. Constance Wood, Director of Graduate Studies

DISSERTATION

A dissertation submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in the College of Arts and Sciences at the University of Kentucky

By<br>Zaid T. Al-Khaledi<br>Lexington, Kentucky

Director: Dr. Richard Charnigo, Professor of Statistics
Lexington, Kentucky

2019

Copyright ${ }^{\text {© }}$ Zaid T. Al-Khaledi 2019

## ABSTRACT OF DISSERTATION

## Serial Testing for Detection of Multilocus Genetic Interactions

A method to detect relationships between disease susceptibility and multilocus genetic interactions is the Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (MDR) technique pioneered by Ritchie et al. (2001). Since its introduction, many extensions have been pursued to deal with non-binary outcomes and/or account for multiple interactions simultaneously. Studying the effects of multilocus genetic interactions on continuous traits (blood pressure, weight, etc.) is one case that MDR does not handle. Culverhouse et al. (2004) and Gui et al. (2013) proposed two different methods to analyze such a case. In their research, Gui et al. (2013) introduced the Quantitative MultifactorDimensionality Reduction (QMDR) that uses the overall average of response variable to classify individuals into risk groups. The classification mechanism may not be efficient under some circumstances, especially when the overall mean is close to some multilocus means. To address such difficulties, we propose a new algorithm, the Ordered Combinatorial Quantitative Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (OQMDR), that uses a series of testings, based on ascending order of multilocus means, to identify best interactions of different orders with risk patterns that minimize the prediction error. Ten-fold cross-validation is used to choose from among the resulting models. Regular permutations testings are used to assess the significance of the selected model. The assessment procedure is also modified by utilizing the Generalized Extreme-Value distribution to enhance the efficiency of the evaluation process. We presented results from a simulation study to illustrate the performance of the algorithm. The proposed algorithm is also applied to a genetic data set associated with Alzheimer's Disease.

KEYWORDS: Multifactor dimensionality reduction; Cross Validation; Model selection; Continuous Trait; Continuous Phenotype; Ordered Combinatorial Partitioning

Author's signature:__Zaid T. Al-Khaledi

Date:
May 3, 2019

# Serial Testing for Detection of Multilocus Genetic Interactions 

By<br>Zaid T. Al-Khaledi

Director of Dissertation:

Director of Graduate Studies: Constance Wood

Date:
May 3, 2019
$I$ would like to dedicate my dissertation to my beloved parents and family

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I would like to express my most profound appreciation to my advisor, Dr. Richard Charnigo, for all the endless encouragement, continuous guidance, unlimited support, and infinite patience he offered throughout my dissertation coursework. Without his invaluable insights, the completion of this dissertation would have never been possible.

I'm extremely grateful to committee member Dr. David Fardo for his tremendous efforts to helping me understand genetic concepts and obtaining the needed dataset to complete my research.

I would also like to extend my deepest gratitude to the members of my committee, Dr. Mia Zhou, Dr. William Griffith, Dr. Arnold Stromberg, Dr. Katherine Thompson, and Dr. Chi Wang. The knowledge I gained from Dr. Mia Zhou and Dr. William Griffith has a significant role in writing my dissertation. Besides him accepting to substitute Dr. Mia Zhou, Dr. Arnold Stromberg's generosity and excitement to help all students made me more eager to accomplish my Ph.D. work. Special thanks to Dr. Katherine Thompson for teaching me solid simulation and coding background, which was much needed for this dissertation. Thanks should also go to Dr. Chi Wang for accepting to serve in my committee.

I must also thank Dr. Constance Wood for the care, feelings, and unwavering support she showed during the hard time I ran into while working on my Ph.D.

I would like to extend my sincere thanks to all professors at the Department of Statistics for the quality of education they provided, which excessively improved my background in Statistics.

Finally, I cannot leave the University of Kentucky without mentioning my friends and classmates Alejandro Villasante Tezanos and Lee Xu for the encouragement, support, and the good time we spent together during my studying.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

Acknowledgments ..... iii
List of Tables ..... vi
List of Figures ..... viii
Chapter 1 A Review of Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction ..... 1
1.1 Introduction ..... 1
1.2 Quantitative Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (QMDR) ..... 7
1.3 This framework ..... 9
Chapter 2 Ordered Combinatorial Partitioning and Quantitative Phenotypes ..... 12
2.1 Introduction ..... 12
2.2 Adaptation of OCP to Handle Continuous Phenotypes ..... 13
2.3 Simulation Study ..... 18
2.3.1 Case 1: True Model $=A B$ ..... 20
2.3.2 Case 2: True Model $=A B D$ ..... 26
2.3.3 Case 3: True Model $=B D$ ..... 29
2.3.4 Case 4: True Model $=A B C$ ..... 34
2.3.5 Case 5: True Models $=A B$ and $A D$ ..... 37
2.3.6 Case 6: True Models $=A B$ and $C D$ ..... 42
Chapter 3 Modification of The OQMDR Algorithm ..... 47
3.1 Preliminary ..... 47
3.2 The Generalized Extreme Value Distribution ..... 48
3.3 Parameter Estimation ..... 50
3.4 Utilizing The GEVD in OQMDR Algorithm ..... 57
3.5 Numerical and Graphical Assessments ..... 60
3.5.1 Case 1: True model $=A B$ ..... 63
3.5.2 Case 2: True model $=A B D$ ..... 81
3.5.3 Case 3: True model $=B D$ ..... 94
3.5.4 Case 4: True model $=A B C$ ..... 107
3.6 Summary ..... 119
Chapter 4 Theoretical Findings ..... 122
4.1 Derivation of MLE's required formulas ..... 122
4.2 Validating the Law of Total Probability on Hau et al. paper [30] ..... 131
4.3 Theorem: Ordered Combinatorial Partitioning in OQMDR ..... 134
Chapter 5 Real data analysis ..... 139
5.1 Alzheimer's Disease (AD) overview ..... 139
5.2 Data presentation ..... 140
5.3 Data analysis ..... 145
5.4 Conclusion ..... 154
5.5 Further work ..... 155
Appendix ..... 157
Presentation of other fitted distributions ..... 157
References ..... 175
Vita ..... 180

## LIST OF TABLES

1.1 A $2 \times 2^{2}$ table represents the case:control data set with two interacting factors ..... 6
1.2 The three $2 \times 2$ tables formed from the original $2 \times 2^{2}$ table ..... 7
2.1 Data presentation of the interaction between $A$ and $B$ ..... 15
2.2 Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=500$ ..... 22
2.3 Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=1000$ ..... 25
2.4 Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=2000$ ..... 25
2.5 Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=500$ ..... 27
2.6 Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=1000$ ..... 28
2.7 Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=2000$ ..... 29
2.8 Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=500$ ..... 31
2.9 Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=1000$ ..... 33
2.10 Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=2000$ ..... 33
2.11 Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=500$ ..... 35
2.12 Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=1000$ ..... 36
2.13 Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=2000$ ..... 37
2.14 Case 5: True models $=A B$ and $A D$, and $n=500$ ..... 40
2.15 Case 5: True model $=A B$ and $A D$, and $n=1000$ ..... 41
2.16 Case 5: True model $=A B$ and $A D$, and $n=2000$ ..... 41
2.17 Case 6: True model $=A B$ and $C D$, and $n=500$ ..... 44
2.18 Case 6: True model $=A B$ and $C D$, and $n=1000$ ..... 45
2.19 Case 6: True model $=A B$ and $C D$, and $n=2000$ ..... 45
3.1 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 64
3.2 Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=1000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 71
3.3 Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=2000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 77
3.4 Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=500$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 82
3.5 Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=1000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 86
3.6 Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=2000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 90
3.7 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 95
3.8 Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=1000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 99
3.9 Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=2000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 103
3.10 Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=500$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 108
3.11 Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=1000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 111
3.12 Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=2000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$ ..... 115
4.1 The original penetrance of the two factors suggested by Hua et al. [30] ..... 131
4.2 The joint probabilities of disease and multilocus combinations of the two factors per the definition of the authors [30] ..... 132
4.3 The suggested penetrance of the two factors ..... 132
4.4 The joint probabilities of disease and multilocus combinations of the two factors per the definition of the authors [30] and our suggested penetrance 132
5.1 Genetic-variable list . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 142
5.2 Statistical summary . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 143
5.3 Model selection of the three cognitive scores . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 146
5.4 Proposed model evaluation . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 146
5.5 Principal Components analysis . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 148

## LIST OF FIGURES

1.1 Interaction representation between two SNPs, and its two anticipated risk patterns ..... 9
2.1 Representation of 4-factor interaction, each with three levels ..... 14
2.2 Case 1: Risk pattern for the proposed 2-way models ..... 23
2.3 Case 1: Risk pattern for the proposed 3 -way models ..... 24
2.4 Case 2: Risk patterns for the proposed 2 -way models ..... 27
2.5 Case 2: Risk pattern for the proposed 3 -way models ..... 27
2.6 Case 3: Risk patterns for the proposed 2-way models ..... 31
2.7 Case 3: Risk patterns for the proposed 3-way models ..... 32
2.8 Case 4: Risk patterns for the proposed 2-way models ..... 35
2.9 Case 4: Risk patterns for the proposed 3 -way models ..... 36
2.10 Case 5: Risk pattern for the proposed 2 -way models ..... 40
2.11 Case 5: Risk patterns for the proposed 3 -way models ..... 40
2.12 Case 6: Risk pattern for the proposed 2-way models ..... 44
2.13 Case 6: Risk pattern for the proposed 3 -way models ..... 44
3.1 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 66
3.2 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 67
3.3 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 69
3.4 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values ..... 70
3.5 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 72
3.6 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 73
3.7 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 74
3.8 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 400 permuted $p$-values ..... 75
3.9 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 78
3.10 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 79
3.11 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 80
3.12 Case 1: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values ..... 81

3.13 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the
null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 83
3.14 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 84
3.15 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 85
3.16 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values ..... 86
3.17 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 87
3.18 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 88
3.19 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 89
3.20 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values ..... 90
3.21 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 91
3.22 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 92
3.23 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 93
3.24 Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 400 permuted $p$-values ..... 94
3.25 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 96
3.26 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 97
3.27 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 98
3.28 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 200 permuted $p$-values ..... 99
3.29 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 100
3.30 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 101
3.31 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 102
3.32 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values ..... 103
3.33 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 104
3.34 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 105
3.35 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 106
3.36 Case 3: True model $=B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values ..... 107
3.37 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 108
3.38 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 109
3.39 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 110
3.40 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 200 permuted $p$-values ..... 111
3.41 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 112
3.42 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 113
3.43 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 114
3.44 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 400 permuted $p$-values ..... 115
3.45 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 116
3.46 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores ..... 117
3.47 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 118
3.48 Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values ..... 119
5.1 Empirical distribution of Cognitive Resilience compared to Normal distri- bution ..... 143
5.2 Empirical distribution of Cognitive Reserve compared to Normal distribution144
5.3 Empirical distribution of Global Resilience compared to Normal distribution145
5.4 Risk patterns of the proposed 2-way interactions for each response ..... 147
5.5 Risk patterns of the proposed 3-way interactions for each response ..... 147
5.6 Cognitive Resilience; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 149
5.7 Cognitive Resilience; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values ..... 150
5.8 Cognitive Reserve; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ based on 29 permuted $t$-scores ..... 151
5.9 Cognitive Reserve; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 29 permuted $p$-values ..... 152
5.10 Global Resilience; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores ..... 153
5.11 Global Resilience; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values

## Chapter 1 A Review of Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction

### 1.1 Introduction

Disease susceptibility is considered to be substantially linked to multilocus genetics on the level of main effects and/or interaction effects [48]. Many parametric statistical methods have been used to model the relationship between disease susceptibility and genetic factors. The majority of these methods were derived from the concept of linear and generalized linear modeling [24]. Yet, due to the high dimensionality of genetic data and/or the relatively small sample size, these methods may not be efficient to work with under such circumstances. To see this, recall that the ordinary least squares (OLS) estimator of the vector of the linear regression coefficient ( $\beta$ ) can be obtained according to equation 1.1:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\beta}=\left(X^{T} X\right)^{-1} X^{T} Y \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $Y$ is an $n$-vector of the response variable, $X$ is an $n \times p$ matrix of predictor variables, $\hat{\beta}$ is a $p$-vector of the OLS estimators of the regression coefficients, $n$ is the number of observations, and $p$ is the number of the regression coefficients in the fitted model.

When we run in a large $p$ small $n$ situation, i.e., the number of regression coefficients is larger than the number of observations $p>n$, then the rank of the matrix $X^{T} X$ is at most $n$. Which means there is a multicollinearity problem in the data. In such situation, the regular inverse for the matrix $X^{T} X$ does not exist. This implies the OLS method is no longer applicable. When a generalized inverse is used to calculate $\hat{\beta}$ according to equation 1.1, a unique estimator would not exist. Even if an approximated matrix inverse is used, the interpretation of the regression coefficients
of the correlated predictors won't be accurate [31]. In genetic studies, $p$ could get substantially large when an interaction of any order between genetic factors is considered in the analysis. For example, a second degree polynomial of a data set with ten genetic factors may contains $p=56$ coefficients, which is the number of intercept, all main effects, and all 2-way effects coefficients in the model. This number gets larger exponentially when the number of factors increases or a higher degree interaction is considered in the study. Consequently, non-parametric alternatives have been developed to overcome the difficulties of using parametric methods.

Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (MDR) algorithm, originally introduced by Ritchie et al.[51], is one of the non-parametric methods that has been widely used and extended to describe the relationship between disease susceptibility and multilocus genetics interaction for case-control and discordant-sib-pair studies. The combinatorial partitioning method, described by Nelson et al. [46], motivated Ritchie and her colleagues to develop the MDR method. The main goal of the MDR method is to capture the single most significant multilocus genetic interaction by reducing the dimensionality of the genetics data to one single predictor via labeling each possible multilocus combination at high risk or low risk according to a certain criterion. Cross-validation is used to assess the validity of the proposed $k$-way interaction for $k=2,3, \ldots, N-1$, where $N$ is the number of factors in the data. Further, the significance of a final proposed interaction is verified using permutation testing.

The MDR method can be summarized in the following steps [51]:

1. First, identify $N$ genes and/or the discrete environmental factors in the data.
2. Next, the frequency distribution of the data is displayed in a $k$-dimensional space for each considered $k$-way interaction. That is, the data of any 2 -way interaction are visualized using a 2 -way contingency table. Similarly, a 3 -way contingency cube (or three 2-way contingency tables) is used to visualize the
data of any 3 -way interaction, and so forth. The dimensions of these cross tabulations are determined by the number of levels in each factor. For instance, the frequency distribution for the interaction between two factors each with three levels is represented using a $3 \times 3$ contingency table. Each cell in the representation contains the frequencies of the cases and controls that correspond to a specific multilocus combination. A comparison between the case:control ratio in each cell and a previously specified threshold is used to determine whether the corresponding combination is considered high risk or low risk. The individuals in each cell (combination) are considered at high risk if the case:control ratio exceeds or equals to the specified threshold. Conversely, the individuals are labeled as low risk if the case:control ratio is inferior to the threshold. In their research, Ritchie and her colleagues suggested the threshold to be 1.0. The goal of the classification process is to reduce the dimensionality of the data space to a one-dimensional binary predictor variable.
3. Then, a proposed model (interaction) of order $k$ is chosen as the one that has the smallest classification error (CE) for each possible $k$-way model. To obtain the CE for each model, the total number of misclassified individuals (patients labeled as low risk, and controls labeled as high risk) is recorded for each model. The misclassification of the patients is usually called false negative error (FN), whereas the number of incorrectly allocated controls is termed as false positive error (FP).
4. After that, in order to assess the validity of the proposed model, a 10 -fold cross-validation (CV) is used for each $k$-way interaction. To perform the CV procedure, the data is randomly divided into ten approximately equally sized groups, such that each group has the exact same number of cases and controls to retain the case:control ratio equal to 1 . In each fold, one group is excluded as a
testing data set, while the remaining 9 groups are deemed as a training data set. Later, the data classification and model selection procedures described in steps 2 and 3 are performed on the training data set. Next, individuals belong to the testing data set (the excluded group) are classified into high risk and low risk according to the binary predictor obtained from performing steps 2 and 3 on the training data set. The exclusion procedure is performed on each of the ten groups and the CEs are reported for each possible $k$-way model constructed using the training data sets. In a similar way to calculate CE, the prediction error (PE) is calculated for each excluded group in the ten folds. In particular, PE is the number of falsely classified individuals in the testing data set. To eliminate the possible effects of the random subsetting of the data, the entire CV procedure is repeated several times (e.g. five times). New random sub-grouping of the data into ten equally sized groups is carried out in each repetition. From all acquired CEs, the average $\mathrm{CE}(\overline{\mathrm{CE}})$ is calculated for each $k$-way model. Then, the models that minimize the $\overline{\mathrm{CE}}$ for each degree of interaction are reported. Finally, the model that better represents the relationship between multilocus genetic interaction and disease susceptibility among all selected models is the one with the minimum average $\mathrm{PE}(\overline{\mathrm{PE}})$, where $\overline{\mathrm{PE}}$ is calculated in a similar way to $\overline{\mathrm{CE}}[24]$. Cross-validation consistency (CVC) is used to evaluate the validity of the selected model. That is, MDR calculates how many times each specific model is selected from all ten folds. A final average cross-validation consistency ( $\overline{\mathrm{CVC}}$ ) is calculated for each proposed model based on the outcomes of all repetitions. The CVC is used to evaluate the validity of the final model because a true underlying effect should be recognizable regardless of the randomized subsetting of the data.
5. Finally, to verify the significance of the selected model, permutation testing is used with 1000 permuted data sets. Each time the labels of cases and controls
are randomly shuffled while the remaining variables are kept untouched. To examine the statistical significance of the winner model, the $\overline{\mathrm{CVC}}$ derived from the original data set is compared to the empirical distribution of the $\overline{\mathrm{CVC}}$ generated by 1000 permutation testings. The proposed model is considered statistically significant if the permuted $p$-value is $\leq 0.05$.

MDR method has been widely studied and extended to improve the overall algorithm and/or to address some of its drawbacks. As described by Gola et al. [24], these extensions generally focused on handling different phenotypic data [26, 36], different data structure [5, 25], risk labels allocation [39, 30], classification result evaluation [41, 7, 44], and $p$-value calculation procedures [43, 48, 17].

One common shortcoming of the MDR is that it only applies for evenly distributed samples, i.e., the controls and cases are equally observed in the data set. Velez et al. [53] proposed a few simple solutions to overcome the imbalanced data issue. The proposed remedies mainly depend on over-sampling, under-sampling, or using the cases:control ratio for the whole sample as a threshold. Another considerable weakness of the MDR algorithm is utilizing a constant threshold to classify individuals into high-risk and low-risk groups. Regardless of the benefits of using a fixed threshold, as it cuts down the computational burden, it may lead to a huge power loss [30].

Hua et al. [30] modified the MDR algorithm by using a threshold that maximizes the $\chi^{2}$ test statistic among all possible ordered $2 \times 2$ contingency tables that are formed from a single $2 \times \prod_{1}^{k} l_{i}$ table, where $k$ represents the number of factors which interact, and $l_{i}$ is the number of levels for the $i^{\text {th }}$ factor. In each possible $k$-way interaction, there are $\Pi_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}-1$ contingency tables of $2 \times 2$ dimensions, each table produces a single $\chi^{2}$ test statistic. These $\Pi_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}-1$ contingency tables represent different patterns of classifications of the data into risk groups. The partitioning and ordering procedures are mainly based on the idea of Ordered Combinatorial Partitioning (OCP) method [46]. Even though the OCP method considers only $\Pi_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}-1$ partitions, it provides
the same benefits of scanning all possible partitionings of the data [30].
In practice, consider the following illustration inspired by an example from Hua et al. [30]. Assume we have a case:control data set with two interacting factors, $A$ and $B$, such that each factor has two levels. Let $a_{1}$ and $a_{2}$ be the levels for factor $A$, and $b_{1}$ and $b_{2}$ be the levels for factor $B$. We can represent the data of this interaction by a $2 \times 2^{2}$ table as shown in table 1.1 below.

Table 1.1: A $2 \times 2^{2}$ table represents the case:control data set with two interacting factors

|  | $a_{1} b_{1}$ | $a_{2} b_{1}$ | $a_{1} b_{2}$ | $a_{2} b_{2}$ | Total |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Case | 1 | 12 | 19 | 28 | 60 |
| Control | 11 | 13 | 20 | 16 | 60 |
| Total | 12 | 25 | 39 | 44 | 120 |

In this example, there are $2^{2}-1$ different $2 \times 2$ tables that can be formed from the original table, where three is the number of columns in the original table minus one. Before we construct the new tables, we need to reorder the columns of the original table in ascending order according to the case:control ratio in each column. Since the columns of the table in our example are already sorted, we can proceed to the next step. To form the first $2 \times 2$ table, we keep the first column as it is, while we merge the last three columns into one column. Then, combine the first two columns and the last two columns into two separate columns to create the second $2 \times 2$ table. Finally, the third table is formed by collapsing the data of the first three columns into one column and leaving the last column alone. Table 1.2 shows the three $2 \times 2$ tables formed from table 1.1.

Now, in each one of the three tables, we label the first column as low risk and the second column as high risk. This suggests that there are three different thresholds floating around, one threshold for each table. The threshold for table 1.2a falls between the case:control ratios of the first two columns of the original table, i.e., between $1 / 11$ and $12 / 13$. While for table 1.2 b , its threshold is in between $12 / 13$ and

Table 1.2: The three $2 \times 2$ tables formed from the original $2 \times 2^{2}$ table

| (a) 1 vs. $2,3,4$ |  |  | (b) 1,2 vs. 3,4 |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $a_{1} b_{1}$ | $a_{2} b_{1}, a_{1} b_{2}, a_{2} b_{2}$ | Total | $a_{1} b_{1}, a_{2} b_{1}$ | $a_{1} b_{2}, a_{2} b_{2}$ | Total |
| Case | 1 | 59 | 60 Case | 13 | 47 | 60 |
| Control | 11 | 49 | 60 Control | 24 | 36 | 60 |
| Total | 12 | 108 | 120 Total | 37 | 83 | 120 |
|  |  |  | (c) 1,2,3 vs. 4 |  |  |  |
|  |  |  | $a_{1} b_{1}, a_{2} b_{1}, a_{1} b_{2} \quad a_{2} b_{2}$ | Total |  |  |
|  |  | Case | $32-28$ | 60 |  |  |
|  |  | Control | $44 \quad 16$ | 60 |  |  |
|  |  | Total | 76 44 | 120 |  |  |

$19 / 20$, which are the ratios of the second and third columns in the original table. Finally, the third threshold, which is for table 1.2c, is larger than 19/20 and smaller than $28 / 16$. The permuted $p$-values of the $\chi^{2}$ tests of these three tables are 0.0049 , 0.0447 , and 0.039 respectively. All $p$-values are calculated from 10000 permutation testings using R software [50]. Obviously, the first table, and thus the first range of thresholds, maximizes the $\chi^{2}$ test statistic among all three $2 \times 2$ tables. Accordingly, choosing any value between $1 / 11$ and $12 / 13$ as a cutoff point leads to maximizing the test statistic and therefore a more powerful test [30]. If the fixed threshold suggested by Ritchie et al., which is 1.0 , were chosen to classify this data set, then the data would be classified in accordance to table 1.2 c with a permuted $p$-value of 0.039 . Thus, sticking with a constant threshold might lead one to propose a weaker model to capture the genetic predisposition.

### 1.2 Quantitative Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (QMDR)

Another essential extension for the MDR method is to make it adequate for analyzing data sets with continuous phenotypes such as plasma triglyceride levels [46], blood pressure [14], and Body Mass Index [18]. In fact, the original MDR method can be utilized to analyze data sets with continuous phenotypes, but only after converting
the continuous trait variable to a binary response variable according to a certain criterion or researcher prior experience. However, analyzing the data set with the original quantitative response would probably be more precise and informative. Generalized Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (GMDR) [39], Model-Based MultifactorDimensionality Reduction [8], and Quantitative Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (QMDR) [26] are some expansion algorithms of the original MDR approach.

The QMDR developed by Gui et al. [26] modified the original MDR by using the overall mean as the criterion of classifying the genotype combinations into high-risk and low-risk groups for each $k$-way model. In particular, each multilocus genotype combination in every possible $k$-way interaction is labeled high risk if its mean is higher than the overall mean of the response. Otherwise, the genotype combination is regarded as low risk. Similar to original MDR, all individuals will be placed in a high-risk group or a low-risk group according to the preceding classification to form a dichotomous predictor variable. A single Two-Sample $t$-Test for Equal Means is employed to compare the high-risk group vs. the low-risk group in each possible $k$-way model. The $k$-way interaction that maximizes the $t$-test statistic is selected as a proposed model for that specific order of interaction. To choose the model that better explains the variation in the continuous response among all suggested $k$-way models, 10 -fold cross-validation with repetitions is performed to compute the crossvalidation consistencies, $t$-scores, and Mean Squared Prediction Errors on testing data for each model. The model that maximizes the testing $t$-score is chosen as the best final model. The significance of the winner model is justified using permutation testings. Under the null hypothesis (i.e., no factors effects involved), the mean of the $t$-scores will approach zero. Thus, in their paper, Gui et al. [26] anticipated the empirical distribution of testing $t$-scores to be approximately normal and centered at zero. Hence, a normal distribution with a mean of zero was employed to estimate the empirical $p$-value of the final model as a replacement of the permuted $p$-value.

### 1.3 This framework

Despite its computational efficiency concerning fast evaluation, QMDR algorithm may lead one to select a weaker model to explain the variation in the response variable. For instance, let's consider the genetic data with two biallelic single-nucleotide polymorphisms (SNPs), with $A$ and $B$ being the major alleles for each SNP, and $a$ and $b$ are the minor alleles (see figure 1.1a). The numbers in figure 1.1a represent the means for multilocus interactions between the two SNPs, in the absence of statistical noise. According to the QMDR algorithm, every cell with a mean greater than the overall mean, which is 125.11 in this example, will be regarded as high risk. This suggests that all individuals with a mean of 128 are assumed at high risk of manifesting the disease as shown in figure 1.1b. However, we may think that a mean of 128 is not sufficiently large to classify the corresponding individuals at high risk; whereas, only cells with means of 150 would probably be considered at high risk (see figure 1.1c). Hence, we proposed a new algorithm to handle such cases. We named our algorithm as the Ordered Combinatorial Quantitative Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (OQMDR)

Figure 1.1: Interaction representation between two SNPs, and its two anticipated risk patterns

| (a) Interaction |  |  |  | (b) QMDR |  |  |  | (c) OQMDR |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | AA | $A a$ | aa |  | AA | $A a$ | $a a$ |  | AA | Aa | $a a$ |
| BB | 120 | 120 | 120 | $B B$ | 120 | 120 | 120 | $B B$ | 120 | 120 | 120 |
| $B b$ | 120 | 120 | 128 | Bb | 120 | 120 | 128 | $B b$ | 120 | 120 | 128 |
| bb | 120 | 128 | 150 | bb | 120 | 128 | 150 | $b b$ | 120 | 128 | 150 |

* Individuals in highlighted cells are at high risk.

In chapter 2, we will extend the idea of Ordered Combinatorial Partitioning method introduced by [30] to data sets with quantitative traits to perform a series of $t$-tests to capture the genetic predisposition. For each possible $k$-way model,
there will be $\Pi_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}-1$ different $t$-tests, where $k$ is the degree of the interaction, and $l_{i}$ is the number of levels of the $i^{\text {th }}$ factor for $i=1,2, \ldots, k$. Each $t$-test corresponds to a specific pattern to classify the data into high-risk and low-risk groups. From each possible $k$-way model, we propose the pattern that corresponds to the largest $t$-statistic among all $\prod_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}-1$ computed $t$-statistics. From the pool of all maximum $t$-statistics derived for all possible $k$-way models, a single maximum of the maximums $t$-statistic will be selected, and the corresponding model along with its risk pattern is considered our proposed model for that specific degree of interaction.

A 10-fold cross-validation procedure with five repetitions is carried out to calculate the average cross-validation consistency ( $\overline{\mathrm{CVC}}$ ), average testing $t$-score, and average Mean Squared Prediction Errors (MSPE) for the proposed $k$-way models. A final single model that maximizes the average testing $t$-score is selected as a winner model. Average cross-validation consistency is used as a tiebreaker in case if the proposed models of various orders end up with the same average testing $t$-score. A most parsimonious model is selected when all criteria are tied between the selected models of different degrees. Permutation testings with 1000 permuted data sets are used to justify the significance of the final model. The $p$-value is calculated by comparing the average permuted testing $t$-scores to the average testing $t$-score of the proposed model. A comparison between the output from our method and QMDR is performed for six different cases. Each case is repeated ten times at three different sample sizes with a different simulated data set. The method that captures the actual model, where applicable, and has smaller MSPE is considered better in each case.

In chapter 3, we modified the OQMDR algorithm to overcome the time consumption issue and to increase the accuracy of model evaluation. The adjustment involves utilizing the Generalized Extreme-Value Distribution (GEVD) to justify model significance, which was used by Pattin et al. [48] and Hua et al. [30] for the same purpose. The approach is initially suggested to reduce computation burdens of using
regular permutation testings. We adapted the GEVD approach to fit with OQMDR to assess both the test statistic and its $p$-value for further justification. The GEVD is considered because the final model is selected upon maximizing the test statistic. Permuting a small set of test statistics could be used to approximate the null distribution of the test statistic. Analogous to the test statistic, the significance of the $p$-value of each suggested model is justified using the same approach. The idea follows from the fact that a $p$-value is a smooth decreasing transformation of a test statistic. Therefore, we tested multiple different distributions as well as three different transformations of the $p$-value to find the best fit according to the graphical representation. Among all considered distributions and/or transformations, the GEVD of $-\log (-\log (p$-value $))$ is chosen to verify the validity of the $p$-value. The uniform $(0,1)$ distribution of the identity transformation shows a huge enhancement when a large number of permuted samples is considered. However, the behavior of the GEVD of the $-\log (-\log (p$-value $))$ is globally better than all other choices. A simulation assessment is carried out on 120 different data sets to evaluate the new procedure. The output is compared to the findings from chapter 2 regarding efficiency and significance of proposed interactions.

In chapter 4, we presented some simple theoretical findings. Finally, in chapter 5, we applied the OQMDR algorithm to Alzheimer Disease data set with three continuous responses.

Copyright ${ }^{\text {© }}$ Zaid T. Al-Khaledi, 2019.

## Chapter 2 Ordered Combinatorial Partitioning and Quantitative Phenotypes

### 2.1 Introduction

Quantitative Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (QMDR) is a modified version of the MDR algorithm. The QMDR is suggested to handle genetic data sets with continuous phenotypes [26]. The method uses the overall mean of the continuous trait as a threshold to classify individuals into high-risk and low-risk groups in each multilocus combination. A single Two-Sample $t$-Test for Equal Means is used to evaluate the difference between the means of the two groups for each possible interaction of a specific order. The best model of order $k=2,3, \ldots, N-1$, where $N$ is the total number of factors in the data, with a particular risk pattern is the one that maximizes the $t$-test statistic among all calculated $t$-statistics of all possible interactions. Under certain conditions, utilizing the overall mean of the continuous variable might lead to choosing a weaker model to explain the genetic predisposition. Even when the QMDR method picks the most important interaction, it might miss the risk pattern that better represents the relationship between the phenotype and the genetic factors.

To overcome the weaknesses in such cases, we developed a new algorithm, the Ordered Combinatorial Quantitative Multifactor-Dimensionality Reduction (OQMDR), that considers all logical risk patterns for each interaction based on the idea of Combinatorial Partitioning (CP) [46]. To reduce the computational burden, we adapted the Ordered Combinatorial Partitioning (OCP) strategy introduced by Hua et al. [30] to work with continuous variables. The use of the OCP is anticipated to give the same maximum $t$ statistic obtained when the exhaustive testing over the set of all possible Combinatorial Partitionings is performed.

### 2.2 Adaptation of OCP to Handle Continuous Phenotypes

The new algorithm can be described as follows. First, determine the total number of factors, $N$, in the data set. Then, reorganize the data into an $N$-dimensional array, such that each element in the array contains data that belong to a certain combination between $N$ factors levels. Figure 2.1 shows the representation of the data when the total number of the selected factors is four. Next, all possible $k$-way interactions are considered for $k=2,3, \ldots, N-1$, and a $k$-dimensional array is used to represent the data. Then, the means of all possible multilocus combinations (cell means) are calculated. There are $\prod_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}$ possible multilocus combinations for each interaction of order $k$, where $l_{i}$ is the number of levels of the $i^{t h}$ factor, and $k$ is the number of interacting factors. Then, we use the OCP procedure to capture the single most important $k$-way interaction that better explains the variation in the continuous phenotype. That is, the multilocus combinations are sorted in an ascending order according to their means. then a set of size $\Pi_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}-1$ tables are formed by collapsing the sorted cells into two groups (high-risk and low-risk groups). After that, a series of $\Pi_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}-1 t$-testings are performed between the high-risk group versus the low-risk group from each partitioning. Each calculated $t$-statistic corresponds to a certain risk pattern of the multilocus interaction. The OCP procedure is applied to each possible interaction of order $k=2,3, \ldots, N-1$. This produces $N-2$ sets of size $\binom{N}{k}$ models along with their risk patterns, in which each model is maximizing the $t$-statistic. Afterward, a single model is selected from each of the $N-2$ sets, such that the selected model is maximizing the maximized $t$-statistics.

For better illustration of risk pattern selection, consider the following example of three interacting factors (i.e., $k=3$ ) with quantitative phenotype. Let $X$ be the continuous variable of interest, and assume there are three interacting factors $A, B$, and $C$, where each factor has three levels, i.e., $l_{i}=3, i=1,2,3$. Let $\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}\right),\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, b_{3}\right)$, and $\left(c_{1}, c_{2}, c_{3}\right)$ be the levels of factor $A, B$, and $C$ respectively.

Figure 2.1: Representation of 4-factor interaction, each with three levels


In this example, we have three possible 2 -way interactions, which are $(A B, A C$, and $B C)$. Thus, if we consider the 2-way interaction between $A$ and $B$, then we would have $\Pi_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}=9$ different multilocus combinations between these two factors. Therefore, the data can be represented in a $3 \times 3$ table (table 2.1). Next, calculate the mean for each possible multilocus combinations, and let $\bar{X}_{j}$ and $\bar{X}_{(j)}$ be the mean and the ordered mean of the $j^{\text {th }}$ combination for $j=1,2, \ldots, 9$. After that, we reorder the cells of the $3 \times 3$ table based on their means in an ascending order. Now, the data in each cell will be treated as a single subset from the original data set, which means we divide the data into nine different groups $\left(g_{(1)}, g_{(2)}, \ldots, g_{(9)}\right)$ in this example, where $g_{(j)}$ is the group of individuals that belong to the $j^{\text {th }}$ ordered cell. Next, we aggregate the groups to perform a series of eight $\left(\Pi_{i=1}^{k} l_{i}-1=8\right)$ different $t$-tests. Each aggregation gives one distinct risk pattern. The first $t$-test will be between the data from $g_{(1)}$ as a first sample and the data from $\left(g_{(2)}, g_{(3)}\right.$, and $\left.g_{(9)}\right)$ combined together as a second sample. Whereas, the second $t$-test will be between the data from
$g_{(1)}$, and $g_{(2)}$ grouped together as a first sample and the data from $\left(g_{(3)}, g_{(4)}\right.$, and $\left.g_{(9)}\right)$ combined together as a second sample, and so forth. Finally, the first eight groups are treated as one sample and tested against the data from the ninth group. Among the eight risk patterns we have in this example, the one that maximizes the $t$-test statistic will be chosen as the proposed risk pattern for the interaction between the factors $A$ and $B$. The procedure is repeated for each possible 2 -way interaction, and a single risk pattern is selected. The interaction that maximizes the maximized $t$-statistics is selected as our proposed 2-way model in this example.

Table 2.1: Data presentation of the interaction between $A$ and $B$


A 10- fold cross-validation procedure with five repetitions is performed to justify the validity of the selected model. That is, we divide the data into ten approximately equal sized subsets, then we exclude one subset as a testing data set while treat the remaining nine subsets as a training data set. The cross-validation consistency (CVC) is calculated for the selected model from each order $k$ for each repetition, and the average CVC over repetitions is reported. The CVC is calculated as the number of times out of ten the proposed model with its risk pattern from the original data is completely reproduced from the cross-validation. Testing $t$-score, as well as Mean Squared Prediction Errors, are calculated for each repetition. The testing $t$ scores are the calculated $t$-test statistics from the testing data set that are classified in accordance with the risk patterns obtained from performing the cross-validation procedure on the training data set. Similarly, the Mean Squared Prediction Errors
are calculated according to equation 2.1. A final $\overline{\mathrm{CVC}}$, average testing $t$-score, and $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ from all five repetitions are reported for each of the $N-2$ selected models. Where $\overline{\text { CVC, and }} \overline{\text { MSPE }}$ are the average of the five CVC's, and MSPE's obtained from each repetition, respectively.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MSPE}=n^{-1} \sum_{j=1}^{10}\left[\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j . l o w}}\left(Y_{i j . l o w}-\hat{Y}_{j . l o w}\right)^{2}+\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j . h i g h}}\left(Y_{i j . \text { high }}-\hat{Y}_{j . \text {.high }}\right)^{2}\right] \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Above, $n$ is the number of individuals in the whole data set, $n_{j \text {.low }}$ and $n_{j \text {.high }}$ are the numbers of individuals classified as low risk and high risk respectively when they are treated as a testing group in the $j^{\text {th }}$ fold, $Y_{i j \text {.low }}$ and $Y_{i j \text {.high }}$ are the observed values of the continuous trait variable correspond to individuals classified at low and high risk respectively in the $j^{\text {th }}$ fold, and $\hat{Y}_{j \text {.low }}$ and $\hat{Y}_{j . h i g h}$ are the means response of individuals classified at low and high risk respectively when they are treated as a training group in the $j^{\text {th }}$ fold.

According to the results from cross-validation, the model with the corresponding risk pattern that maximizes the average testing $t$-score is chosen as the best model among all $N-2$ proposed models of any degree. The $\overline{\text { CVC }}$ is used as a tiebreaker when the average testing $t$-scores are tied between the selected models. Finally, a most parsimonious model is chosen when both the average testing $t$-scores and the $\overline{\mathrm{CVC}}$ are tied for two models.

The significance of the winner model is justified by permuting the original data 1000 times, and the average permuted CVC, the average permuted testing $t$-score, and average permuted MSPE are calculated from each permuted data set. The $p$-value, which is denoted by $p_{t}$, is calculated according to equation 2.2 , and it represents how many times the calculated average testing $t$-score is smaller than the average permuted testing $t$-score divided by 1000 . The examined model is considered significant if its
$p$-value is less than 0.05 .

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{t}=\frac{1}{1000} \sum_{\text {perm }=1}^{1000} \mathbb{I}_{\left\{t^{*}<\bar{t}^{*} \text { perm }\right\}} \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\overline{t^{*}}$ is the average testing $t$-score calculated from the original data set, $\overline{t^{*}}{ }_{\text {perm }}$ is the average permuted testing $t$-score, and $p_{t}$ is the empirical $p$-value.

To summarize the model selection process in the OQMDR, let $t_{1, j, k}, t_{2, j, k}, \ldots, t_{r, j, k}$ be the $t$ statistics of the ordered risk patterns of the $j^{t h} k$-way interaction, where $r=\Pi_{i}^{k} l_{i}-1$ is the total number of the considered risk patterns of the $j^{\text {th }} k$-way interaction, where $l_{i}$ is the number of levels of the $i^{\text {th }}$ factor. Then, for each possible interaction of any order $k$, we choose the risk pattern that maximizes the test statistic:

$$
t_{\max , j, k}:=\max \left(t_{1, j, k}, t_{2, j, k}, \ldots, t_{r, j, k}\right)
$$

where $t_{\max , j, k}$ is the largest test statistic produced from all examined risk patterns of the $j^{\text {th }} k$-way interaction.

Later, we choose the best $k$-way interaction by optimizing over all maximized test statistics:

$$
t_{\max , \max , k}:=\max \left(t_{\max , 1, k}, t_{\max , 2, k}, \ldots, t_{\max , \operatorname{m}, k}\right)
$$

where $t_{\max , \max , k}$ is the largest $t$-statistic produced from all possible $k$-way interactions, and $m=\binom{N}{k}$ is the number of all possible $k$-way interactions.

Finally, we choose the final best model by optimizing over the testing $t$-scores of
the proposed models of order $k=2,3, \ldots, N-1$. That is, if $t_{k}^{*}$ is the testing $t$-score of the proposed $k$-way interaction, then the final best interaction with its selected risk pattern is the one with a testing score $t_{k_{\max }}^{*}$, such that:

$$
t_{k_{\max }}^{*}:=\max \left(t_{2}^{*}, t_{3}^{*}, \ldots, t_{N-1}^{*}\right)
$$

Comparing to QMDR method, that method will only consider one risk pattern for each possible interaction of any degree, which is based on the overall mean of the continuous trait variable. The QMDR requires a single $t$-test for each interaction, and it selects the interaction with the largest $t$ statistic among other examined interactions. The two algorithms will likely end up proposing the same model and risk pattern when the cause of the variation in the response is tremendously distinguishable. Yet, in many cases, some combinations have means that are very close to the overall mean, which might lead to increase prediction error if QMDR is employed.

In the next section, we applied the OQMDR algorithm on several simulated data sets. The QMDR algorithm also applied to the same simulated data sets to assess the ability of the OQMDR to capture the correct model and/or to select a model with a smaller MSPE comparing to QMDR.

### 2.3 Simulation Study

We tested our proposed method using multiple simulated data sets. The main goal of the simulation study is to examine the ability of the OQMDR method to spot the most important interaction and whether that captured model coincides with the actual model that used to generate the data. In addition to that, we compared the performance of both the QMDR and OQMDR methods in all simulated data sets. Each simulated data set consists of five variables in which four of them contain
individuals information about four genetic factors, each with three levels. In this work, we are using upper case letters to represent genetic factors, i.e. $A, B, C .$. , etc. Whereas, the levels (allele combinations) of factor $A$ are presented as $(A A, A a, a a)$, and $(B B, B b, b b)$ for factor $B$, and so on. Finally, the fifth variable contains the continuous phenotypic information of individuals.

The simulation procedure is accomplished as follows. First, the genetic information is generated in accordance with the Hardy-Weinberg principle [16]. That is, assuming each gene has two alleles (for example $A$ and $a$ ) with a single locus frequencies of $p(A)=p$ and $p(a)=q$. Hence $p(A A)=p^{2}, p(A a)=2 p q$, and $p(a a)=q^{2}$. In all simulated data sets, genetic information are generated using $p=q=0.5$. After that, all possible combinations of all factor levels are represented in a four dimensional space as shown in figure 2.1.

Next, the continuous trait variable is generated based on six different scenarios in which each scenario links the high phenotype status of individuals to a certain combination of the genetic factors. Ten different data sets for each sample size of 500 , 1000 , and 2000 are randomly generated according to each scenario. In our simulation study, all data sets are generated based on either one or two 2-way interaction(s) (equation 2.3), or a single 3-way interaction (equation 2.4) as the actual disease predisposition interaction(s). Both QMDR and OQMDR algorithms are applied to each of the generated data sets.

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{i}=\mu+\sum_{1 \leq a<b}^{4} \sum_{l_{a}, l_{b} \geq 1}^{3} \alpha_{a b . l_{a} l_{b}} \mathbb{I}_{\left\{X_{a i}=l_{a}, X_{b i}=l_{b}\right\}}+\epsilon_{i} \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Above, $Y_{i}$ is the simulated value of the trait variable of the $i^{\text {th }}$ individual, $\mu$ is a baseline mean, and it's considered known for the purpose of simulation, $\alpha_{a b}$ is a $3 \times 3$ matrix of coefficients of the 2-way interaction between the $a^{\text {th }}$ and the $b^{t h}$
factors (there are a total of four factors in each simulated data set) and it's considered known for the purpose of simulation, $\mathbb{I}_{\{\cdot\}}$ is the indicator function, $X_{a i}$ and $X_{b i}$ are the generated allele combinations for the $a^{t h}$ and $b^{t h}$ factors respectively of the $i^{t h}$ individual, $l_{a}$ and $l_{b}$ are the allele combinations (the levels) of the $a^{t h}$ and $b^{t h}$ factors respectively, and $\epsilon_{i}$ is the random error term of the $i^{\text {th }}$ individual, and $\epsilon_{i} \stackrel{i i d}{\sim} N(0,400)$.

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{i}=\mu+\sum_{1 \leq a<b<c}^{4} \sum_{l_{a}, l_{b}, l_{c}, \geq 1}^{3} \beta_{a b c . l_{a} l_{b} l_{c}} \mathbb{I}_{\left\{X_{a i}=l_{a}, X_{b i}=l_{b}, X_{c i}=l_{c}\right\}}+\epsilon_{i} \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Above,$Y_{i}$ is the simulated value of the trait variable of the $i^{t h}$ individual, $\mu$ is a baseline mean, and it's considered known for the purpose of simulation, $\beta_{a b c}$ is a $3 \times 3 \times 3$ array of coefficients of the 3 -way interaction between the $a^{t h}, b^{t h}$, and $c^{t h}$ factors and it's considered known for the purpose of simulation, $X_{a i}, X_{b i}$, and $X_{c i}$ are the generated allele combinations of the $a^{\text {th }}, b^{t h}$, and $c^{\text {th }}$ factors respectively of the $i^{\text {th }}$ individual, $l_{a}, l_{b}$, and $l_{c}$ are the allele combinations (the levels) of the $a^{\text {th }}, b^{\text {th }}$, and $c^{\text {th }}$ factors respectively, and $\epsilon_{i}$ is the random error term of the $i^{t h}$ individual, and $\epsilon_{i} \stackrel{i i d}{\sim} N(0,400)$.

For the purpose of simulation, the allele combinations are defined as numbers instead of letters. For example in factor $A$, we coded its allele combinations (or levels) as $(A A, A a, a a)=(0,1,2)$.

The output of the six different simulated scenarios is demonstrated in the following subsections.

### 2.3.1 Case 1: True Model $=A B$

In the first case, the continuous phenotype variable is generated according to equation 2.3 with $\alpha_{12}$ be the only non-zero matrix in this case and it's given below. This matrix of coefficients will make most of the variation in the response variable due
to the 2-way interaction between factors $A$ and $B$. Therefore, $A B$ is the anticipated proposed 2-way interaction, and one of $A B C$ and $A B D$ is likely to be selected as the proposed 3 -way interaction because both of these interactions contains the true 2-way interaction $(A B)$ that causes the disease. The reason behind choosing a simply spotted 2-way interaction is to assess the ability of the OQMDR method to capture the actual model and to see whether it gives the same output given by QMDR or not. First, we run both OQMDR and QMDR algorithms on ten different data sets of size 500 , the output are summarized in table 2.2. Then, using the same model defined in 2.3 with the matrix $\alpha_{12}$ defined in 2.5, two different data sets of sizes 1000 and 2000 respectively are randomly generated and analyzed using both algorithms. The summarized results are presented in tables 2.3 and 2.4 respectively.

$$
\alpha_{12}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
20 & 20 & 20  \tag{2.5}\\
20 & 0 & 0 \\
20 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

Table 2.2: Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=500$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | CVC |  | MSPE |  | Final Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AB | AB | 11.7287 | 11.7287 | 10 | 10 | 408.4470 | 408.4470 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 10.3067 | 11.3290 | 4.2 | 8.6 | 427.7721 | 414.4013 |  |  |  |
| 2 | AB | AB | 10.0317 | 10.0317 | 10 | 10 | 388.1858 | 8 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 8.5569 | 9.1548 | 4.6 | 6 | 405.6381 | 399.4966 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AB | AB | 9.2992 | 9.505 | 9.8 | 10 | 415.1356 | 413.2127 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 7.5275 | 8.0303 | 2.4 | 3 | 441.5868 | 434.3282 |  |  |  |
| 4 | AB | AB | 10.1738 | 10.1738 | 10 | 10 | 394.1987 | 394.1987 | AB | AB | 0.002 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 8.5796 | 9.0350 | 4.4 | 3.2 | 414.5262 | 410.0920 |  |  |  |
| 5 | AB | AB | 8.8108 | 8.8108 | 10 | 10 | 384.8257 | 384.8257 | AB | AB | 0.001 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 7.6971 | 8.0768 | 2.8 | 4 | 398.9528 | 394.6174 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AB | B | 9.4734 | 9.5716 | 9.8 | 10 | 412.9209 | 411.4114 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 9.4018 | 9.4370 | 6.4 | 7 | 413.7644 | 413.8329 |  |  |  |
| 7 | AB | AB | 9.3303 | 9.8125 | 9 | 10 | 434.5222 | 426.9884 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 8.0843 | 8.3846 | 4.6 | 1.8 | 448.9833 | 448.7589 |  |  |  |
| 8 | AB | AB | 11.8964 | 11.8964 | 10 | 10 | 385.3691 | 385.3691 | AB | AB | 0.001 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 10.2532 | 11.2503 | 4.6 | 7.6 | 409.5222 | 394.6645 |  |  |  |
| 9 | AB | AB | 11.9762 | 11.9762 | 10 | 10 | 357.8918 | 357.8918 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 11.1572 | 11.5281 | 6.4 | 6.2 | 369.0396 | 363.5977 |  |  |  |
| 10 | AB | AB | 10.0830 | 10.083 | 10 | 10 | 395.8701 | 395.8701 | AB | AB | 0.002 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 8.465 | 8.3005 | 3.4 | 1.8 | 417.23 | 421.12 |  |  |  |

Both OQMDR and QMDR proposed the interaction $A B$ with the pattern shown in figure 2.2, which minimizes the prediction error and coincides with the real risk pattern, as the best 2-way model in most of the ten data sets. In fact, QMDR captured the risk pattern shown in figure 2.2 from all 10 samples. On the other hand, our method failed to spot the risk pattern that minimizes the prediction error in two cases, and it selected another risk pattern. This is showing that the QMDR performs better (and faster) when the risk pattern is recognizable, especially when the sample size is relatively small comparing to the number of multilocus combinations in the data set.

For the proposed 3-way model, $A B C$ and $A B D$ are chosen as the best 3-way models with the given risk pattern in figure 2.3 , which minimizes the prediction error and matches the actual risk pattern used to generate the data set. The proposed risk pattern of the 3 -way models shown in figure 2.3 is reproduced two out of ten and three out of ten times from OQMDR and QMDR respectively. Notice that both
$A B C$ and $A B D$ models proposed the same risk patterns, this is mainly because factors $C$ and $D$ do not have a considerable effect on the continuous trait, and much of the variation is originally from the 2-way interaction between $A$ and $B$. This can be seen clearly by looking at the testing $\bar{t}$-scores, as well as the cross-validation consistencies, of the proposed 2 -way and 3 -way models, where the 2 -way models are favored from all ten generated data sets. Both algorithms perform similarly when capturing the best 2-way model, with QMDR performing better in samples 6 and 7, where the $\overline{\text { MSPEs }}$ are smaller for QMDR in these two cases. The reason why the MSPEs are smaller is because the cross-validation consistencies are larger, which means various risk patterns are proposed in some folds of the cross-validation procedure for OQMDR. This will make the predicted values in equation 2.1 calculated by OQMDR different from the ones predicted by QMDR, which in turn make the two $\overline{\text { MSPEs different. Even though QMDR has lower MSPE in two data sets, the }}$ two algorithms selected the same risk pattern of the model $A B$ from the remaining eight data sets. The $p$-values for the winner models from the OQMDR method are calculated using equation 2.2 and reported in table 2.2. All proposed models show a statistical significance at $\alpha=0.05$.

Figure 2.2: Case 1: Risk pattern for the proposed 2-way models


Figure 2.3: Case 1: Risk pattern for the proposed 3-way models


Tables 2.3 and 2.4 show the results of analyzing data sets of size 1000 and 2000 generated in accordance with equation 2.3 with the matrix $\alpha_{12}$ defined in 2.5. Again, both algorithms selected $A B$ with the pattern shown in figures 2.2 as the best 2way interaction, and as the best final model from all ten data sets. All final ten best models are minimizing the $\overline{\mathrm{MSPEs}}$, and are statistically significant at $\alpha=0.05$. Similarly, $A B C$ and $A B D$ with risk pattern shown in figure 2.3 are proposed from all data sets except sample 6 when $n=1000$, where both algorithms failed to capture the true risk pattern. As the sample size gets bigger, both algorithms propose 3-way interactions with $\overline{\text { CVCs, }}, \bar{t}$-scores, and $\overline{\text { MSPEssimilar to the ones of the selected 2-way }}$ models in most cases. This is mainly because, as sample size increases, enough data for multilocus combination is generated to capture the true risk pattern. However, none of the selected 3 -way models beat the chosen 2 -way models in all cases. This justifies the ability of both algorithms to detect the most important interaction among all possible interactions of any degree.

Table 2.3: Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=1000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | $\overline{\text { CVC }}$ |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AB | AB | 16.2091 | 16.2091 | 10 | 10 | 391.3797 | 391.3797 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 16.0485 | 16.2091 | 9.6 | 10 | 393.1263 | 391.3797 |  |  |  |
| 2 | A | AB | 14.9832 | 14.9832 | 10 | 10 | 4.2057 | 394.2057 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABC | 14.3735 | 14.4725 | 4.4 | 5.6 | 399.5710 | 399.077 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AB | AB | 16.8702 | 16.8702 | 10 | 10 | 415.5575 | 415.5575 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 16.0420 | 16.8702 | 6.6 | 10 | 425.2365 | 415.5575 |  |  |  |
| 4 | AB | AB | 16.1570 | 16.1570 | 10 | 10 | 385.8023 | 385.8023 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 16.1570 | 16.0306 | 10 | 9.6 | 385.8023 | 386.9053 |  |  |  |
| 5 | AB | AB | 15.7406 | 15.7406 | 10 | 10 | 418.5548 | 418.5548 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 15.1607 | 15.1955 | 6 | 6.8 | 424.3849 | 424.0121 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AB | AB | 14.306 | 14.3067 | 10 | 10 | 416.5734 | 416.5734 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 13.4176 | 13.8459 | 4.4 | 5 | 425.8612 | 421.7158 |  |  |  |
| 7 | AB | AB | 15.7926 | 15.7926 | 10 | 10 | 396.3913 | 396.3913 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 15.7926 | 15.6330 | 10 | 9.6 | 396.3913 | 397.7595 |  |  |  |
| 8 | AB | AB | 14.7499 | 14.7499 | 10 | 10 | 387.1103 | 387.1103 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 13.9113 | 14.4371 | 4.4 | 8.2 | 395.2781 | 390.1936 |  |  |  |
| 9 | AB | AB | 15.1977 | 15.1977 | 10 | 10 | 386.0439 | 386.0439 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 14.5515 | 14.4102 | 5.8 | 6 | 391.7452 | 392.7678 |  |  |  |
| 10 | AB | AB | 13.6602 | 13.6602 | 10 | 10 | 400.5872 | 400.5 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 12.99 | 13.218 | 5.6 | 8.4 | 407.2909 | 405.08 |  |  |  |

Table 2.4: Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=2000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | $\overline{\text { CVC }}$ |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AB | AB | 20.8692 | 20.8692 | 10 | 10 | 400.5952 | 400.5952 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 20.8311 | 20.8692 | 9.8 | 10 | 400.8953 | 400.5952 |  |  |  |
| 2 | AB | AB | 22.1992 | 22.1992 | 10 | 10 | 19.1182 | 419.1182 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 22.1992 | 22.1992 | 10 | 10 | 419.1182 | 419.1182 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AB | AB | 23.0960 | 23.0960 | 10 | 10 | 397.5907 | 397.5907 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 23.0960 | 23.0960 | 10 | 10 | 397.5907 | 397.5907 |  |  |  |
| 4 | AB | AB | 22.2190 | 22.2190 | 10 | 10 | 403.642 | . 628 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 22.2190 | 22.2190 | 10 | 10 | 403.6428 | 403.6428 |  |  |  |
| 5 | AB | AB | 23.7884 | 23.7884 | 10 | 10 | 395.2871 | 395.2871 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 23.7884 | 23.7884 | 10 | 10 | 395.2871 | 395.2871 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AB | AB | 23.3298 | 23.3298 | 10 | 10 | 9.8670 | 409.8670 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 23.7884 | 23.3298 | 9.8 | 10 | 410.2410 | 409.8670 |  |  |  |
| 7 | AB | AB | 22.3034 | 22.3034 | 10 | 10 | 417.6942 | 417.6942 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 23.2794 | 22.3034 | 9.8 | 10 | 417.7373 | 417.6942 |  |  |  |
| 8 | AB | AB | 22.9130 | 22.9130 | 10 | 10 | 380.0712 | 380.0712 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 22.2509 | 22.7141 | 9.6 | 9.2 | 380.8257 | 381.4304 |  |  |  |
| 9 | AB | AB | 22.7459 | 22.7459 | 10 | 10 | 384.0000 | 384.0000 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 22.7077 | 22.7459 | 8.2 | 10 | 385.4606 | 384.0000 |  |  |  |
| 10 | AB | AB | 22.0691 | 22.0691 | 10 | 10 | 401.2103 | 401.2103 | AB | AB | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 22.0691 | 22.0691 | 10 | 10 | 401.2103 | 401.2103 |  |  |  |

### 2.3.2 Case 2: True Model $=A B D$

In this case, the data is generated according to equation 2.4 to produce a 3rd-degree interaction between $A, B$ and $D$. The $3 \times 3 \times 3$ array of coefficients of the 3 -way interaction between factors $A, B$ and $D$ is defined in array $\beta_{124}$ below (2.6), which is the only non-zero array in equation 2.4. The proposed 2-way model is anticipated to be either $A B, A D$, or $B D$ because all of them are related to the true 3 -way model. The two algorithms are applied to ten different data sets of sizes 500, 1000, and 2000 (i.e., a total of 30 different samples). The results are summarized in tables 2.5, 2.6, and 2.7 for each distinct sample size, respectively.

$$
\beta_{124}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
20 & 20 & 20  \tag{2.6}\\
20 & 0 & 0 \\
20 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right] \cdot\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
20 & 20 & 20 \\
20 & 0 & 0 \\
20 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right] \cdot\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
20 & 20 & 20 \\
20 & 20 & 20 \\
20 & 20 & 20
\end{array}\right]
$$

Figure 2.4 shows the risk pattern of the proposed 2nd-degree interactions. Both algorithms choose either $A B, A D$, or $B D$ with the same pattern from nine different data sets. The selected risk pattern, in fact, coincides with the true risk pattern for the proposed models. That is, the data of the highlighted combinations in figure 2.4 are originally generated from normal distribution with $\mu=140$, so they are anticipated to be at high risk. For the 3 -way interaction, $A B D$ with the risk pattern shown in figure 2.5 are chosen as the best 3rd-degree interaction in both methods from all simulated data sets. When $n=500$, the OQMDR was able to catch the true 3rd-degree interaction with the true risk pattern as a best final model three times out of ten generated data sets. Similarly the QMDR did, however, OQMDR minimized the MSPE six times comparing to three times for QMDR. This suggests that, compared to Case 1 results, the OQMDR detects higher order interactions better than QMDR when a considerable portion of the variation is linked to higher
degree models. Permutation testing validates the significance of all final models at $\alpha=0.05$.

Table 2.5: Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=500$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | CVC |  | MSPE |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AB | AB | 6.5730 | 6.1691 | 9, | 6.2 | 455.9759 | 458.6748 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 10.7520 | 10.6366 | 9.6 | 9.2 | 398.7606 | 400.4112 |  |  |  |
| 2 | BD | BD | 10.4849 | 9.9858 | 8 | 8 | 448.4179 | 453.5067 | ABD | ABD | 0.001 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 14.0163 | 13.357 | 9.8 | 8.2 | 390.9129 | 401.4832 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AB | AB | 8.7770 | 8.9778 | 7.4 | 8.4 | 452.556 | 449.0203 | ABD | D | 0.001 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 12.9996 | 12.9996 | 9.8 | 10 | 386.422 | 386.4220 |  |  |  |
| 4 | AB | AB | 6.8381 | 7.3701 | 7 | 8.6 | 6.0006 | 446.8594 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 11.3547 | 11.2875 | 9.6 | 9.8 | 392.2859 | 393.2927 |  |  |  |
| 5 | BD | BD | 7.1715 | 7.1715 | 5.8 | 5.8 | 432.2053 | 432.20 | ABD | ABD | 0.002 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 9.8944 | 9.8585 | 8.4 | 8 | 396.0920 | 396.8831 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AD | AD | 8.2396 | 8.2396 | 10 | 10 | 447.0274 | 44 | ABD | ABD | 0.001 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 10.1203 | 9.8981 | 9.6 | 9.4 | 422.0019 | 424.1579 |  |  |  |
| 7 | AB | AB | 8.3741 | 8.737 | 8 | 8.6 | 460.101 | 453.60 | ABD | ABD | 0.001 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 12.3105 | 11.9923 | 8.4 | 7.8 | 403.2968 | 407.4371 |  |  |  |
| 8 | BD | BD | 6.4064 | 6.5146 | 4 | 4.8 | 483.439 | 479.9112 | ABD | ABD | 0.001 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 8.1019 | 10.9400 | 7 | 8 | 443.2720 | 416.6436 |  |  |  |
|  | AD | AD | 6.3084 | 6.6935 | 3 | 5.4 | 423.0105 | 418.6122 | ABD | ABD | 0.005 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 8.2252 | 8.5616 | 3.4 | 2 | 401.3948 | 396.7326 |  |  |  |
|  | AD | AD | 10.8318 | 10.8318 | 10 | 10 | 448.6341 | 448.6341 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 12.2139 | 12.0012 | 9.8 | 9 | 422.3265 | 425.330 |  |  |  |

Figure 2.4: Case 2: Risk patterns for the proposed 2-way models


Figure 2.5: Case 2: Risk pattern for the proposed 3-way models


As the sample size increases, both algorithms were able to catch the true 3rd order interaction with true risk pattern in most cases. OQMDR did slightly better than QMDR in most cases, which can be seen by looking at the MSPE. Similarly, for 2-way interaction, both algorithms show better performance when $n=1000$ and $n=2000$.

Table 2.6: Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=1000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | CVC |  | MSPE |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AD | AD | 10.5574 | 10.2271 | 98 | 88 | 441.5641 | 442.5816 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 15.1906 | 14.8834 | 9.8 | 8.8 | 396.6424 | 399.3344 |  |  |  |
| 2 | AB | AB | 11.760 | 12.1116 | 8.6 | 9 | 2 | 445.3460 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 17.4943 | 17.1770 | 9.6 | 8 | 391.4856 | 394.3848 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AB | AB | 10.1154 | 10.183 | 8.4 | 8.6 | 666 | 448.0307 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 15.2729 | 15.0277 | 10 | 9.4 | 402.2826 | 404.4142 |  |  |  |
| 4 | AB | AB | 11.8645 | 11.8339 | 9.6 | 9.6 | 446.2381 | 445.5723 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 16.5129 | 16.4661 | 9.6 | 9.4 | 399.4253 | 399.8401 |  |  |  |
| 5 | AD | AD | 11.0 | 11.236 | 7.6 | 8.2 | 419.1949 | 416.9439 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 16.4543 | 16.3527 | 9.4 | 8.8 | 367.1102 | 368.0519 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AB | AB | 9.7263 | 10.183 | 8 | 8.8 | 445.8096 | 441.5744 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 14.8798 | 14.5676 | 9.6 | 8.2 | 400.7890 | 403.5115 |  |  |  |
| 7 | AD | AD | 12.7311 | 12.7311 | 9.8 | 9.8 | 461.77 | 461.7784 | ABD | AB |  |
|  | ABD | ABD | 16.357 | 16.2499 | 9.8 | 9.6 | 419.8441 | 420.9200 |  |  |  |
| 8 | AD | AD | 12.2878 | 12.2878 | 9.4 | 9.4 | 444.8018 | 444.8018 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 16.8883 | 16.8883 | 10 | 10 | 397.9913 | 397.9913 |  |  |  |
| 9 | AB | AB | 11.35 | 11.2 | 8.8 | 9.2 | 0 | 430.9132 | ABD | ABD |  |
|  | ABD | ABD | 15.0487 | 14.9694 | 10 | 9.8 | 394.3994 | 395.1003 |  |  |  |
| 10 | AB | AB | 13.3458 | 13.3458 | 10 | 10 | 419.7528 | 419.7528 | D | BD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 16.6502 | 16.6893 | 9.6 | 9.8 | 386.2950 | 385.9145 |  |  |  |

Table 2.7: Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=2000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | $\overline{\text { CVC }}$ |  | $\overline{\mathrm{MSPE}}$ |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR | New | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AD | AD | 14.8645 | 15.0224 | 8.8 | 9 | 444.0846 | 442.5293 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 21.731 | 21.6413 | 10 | 9.8 | 397.6133 | 398.1759 |  |  |  |
| 2 | AD | AD | 17.0628 | 16.9337 | 9.4 | 9.6 | 440.5959 | 440.621 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 22.2545 | 22.2545 | 10 | 10 | 403.5848 | 403.5848 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AD | AD | 15.1775 | 15.3682 | 8.2 | 8.6 | 434.3665 | 432.7851 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 22.5347 | 22.5347 | 10 | 10 | 385.8353 | 385.8353 |  |  |  |
| 4 | BD | BD | 14.7748 | 14.2952 | 3.8 | 3.8 | 426.5887 | 428.0045 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 23.6509 | 23.6509 | 10 | 10 | 366.8095 | 366.8095 |  |  |  |
| 5 | AD | AD | 15.7685 | 15.9937 | 4 | 4.8 | 493.5584 | 491.1328 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 25.3687 | 25.3687 | 10 | 10 | 418.3394 | 418.3394 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AB | AB | 17.2735 | 17.5525 | 9.2 | 9.6 | 459.3593 | 457.415 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 24.0497 | 24.0497 | 10 | 10 | 409.8031 | 409.8031 |  |  |  |
| 7 | BD | BD | 14.4874 | 13.9843 | 8.4 | 8.4 | 440.5774 | 442.247 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 21.6227 | 21.6227 | 10 | 10 | 394.0755 | 394.0755 |  |  |  |
| 8 | BD | BD | 15.8059 | 16.081 | 9 | 9 | 439.1698 | 437.3144 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 21.9942 | 21.9942 | 10 | 10 | 394.0679 | 394.0679 |  |  |  |
| 9 | BD | BD | 15.511 | 15.511 | 6.6 | 6.6 | 478.2585 | 478.2585 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 22.2766 | 22.187 | 8.6 | 5.4 | 427.2937 | 428.0481 |  |  |  |
| 10 | BD | BD | 15.4857 | 15.4857 | 5.4 | 5.4 | 429.6563 | 429.6563 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 21.9574 | 21.9574 | 10 | 10 | 384.8686 | 384.8686 |  |  |  |

The first two cases, in which the variation is generated to be spotted easily, prove the ability of OQMDR method to spot the true source of variation precisely. However, besides its fast performance, QMDR performs slightly better in a few cases in terms of precision, especially when a low order of interaction is considered and the sample size is relatively small. In the next two cases, we will test the ability of OQMDR of detecting the true models when it is somewhat ambiguous.

### 2.3.3 Case 3: True Model $=B D$

In this case, we are considering an interaction with a risk pattern that is not easy to identify. The data is generated using equation 2.3 such that the 2 -way interaction between factors $B$ and $D$ with the multilocus coefficient matrix $\alpha_{24}$ defined in equation 2.7 is causing the variation. However, in this scenario, some multilocus combinations are hard to tell whether they are at high risk or not because their averages are very close to the overall mean of the continuous variable. Since QMDR is using the
overall mean as a threshold to classify individuals, we expect these combinations to be identified at high risk when QMDR is employed. This is because the fixed overall mean of the simulated data is 125.112 , and is slightly lower than 128 , the fixed average of the multilocus combinations $b b D d$ and $B b d d$. On the other hand, since the OQMDR is optimizing over the $t$ statistic as a criterion for classification, these cells likely would not be classified as high risk when OQMDR is employed because 125.112 is not too far from 128 .

$$
\alpha_{24}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 0 & 0  \tag{2.7}\\
0 & 0 & 8 \\
0 & 8 & 30
\end{array}\right]
$$

The simulation study shows that with samples of size $n=500$, OQMDR algorithm selected the 2 nd-degree model $B D$ with a risk pattern that labels the combination $b b d d$ at high risk, and leaves the remaining eight combinations at low risk (figure 2.6a). Conversely, QMDR detected a risk pattern that assumes individuals with $b b D d, B b d d$, or bbdd combinations are at high risk, while the remaining individuals get a low-risk label (figure 2.6b). Results in table 2.8 show that the OQMDR algorithm proposed models with lower $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ than the one suggested by QMDR in eight different data sets of size $n=500$. OQMDR mistakenly proposed a three-way interaction from one simulated data set. We believe this happened mainly due to over-fitting of the three-way interaction. All proposed interactions show a statistical significance under $\alpha=0.05$ level of significance.

Table 2.8: Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=500$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | $\overline{\text { CVC }}$ |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | $p_{t}$ |
| 1 | BD | BD | 12.5683 | 4.1713 | 10 | 2.8 | 434.0705 | 504.8569 | BCD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 12.9882 | 3.3897 | 9.2 | 1 | 485.8083 | 518.4198 |  |  |  |
| 2 | BD | BD | 8.7738 | 5.4023 | 10 | 7.8 | 408.2276 | 422.9147 | BD | BD | 0.005 |
|  | ABD | BCD | 7.6926 | 4.5184 | 9.6 | 3.4 | 410.2450 | 435.5922 |  |  |  |
| 3 | BD | BD | 9.1315 | 4.4981 | 10 | 2.8 | 416.5782 | 457.2411 | BD | BD | 0.002 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 6.6742 | 3.4628 | 6.2 | 1 | 435.0735 | 475.9284 |  |  |  |
| 4 | BD | BD | 7.9738 | 6.7334 | 10 | 9.2 | 449.8849 | 464.1022 | BD | BD | 0.004 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 4.3174 | 5.1466 | 5.6 | 2.2 | 479.8738 | 485.3993 |  |  |  |
| 5 | BD | BD | 8.6924 | 5.9639 | 10 | 9.4 | 449.0318 | 470.4264 | BD | BD | 0.003 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 7.0404 | 5.3489 | 7.4 | 2.6 | 460.5493 | 479.8260 |  |  |  |
| 6 | BD | BD | 9.8547 | 6.5190 | 10 | 10 | 399.2730 | 437.8976 | BD | BD | 0.001 |
|  | ABD | BCD | 6.1132 | 3.8583 | 4.2 | 0.6 | 444.9145 | 470.8817 |  |  |  |
| 7 | BD | BD | 5.5904 | 7.3218 | 5 | 9.6 | 410.0513 | 394.3539 | BD | BD | 0.006 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 5.0521 | 6.5264 | 2.6 | 3.4 | 420.7200 | 405.2157 |  |  |  |
| 8 | BD | BD | 7.0933 | 3.9189 | 10 | 8.2 | 426.6266 | 458.4983 | BD | BD | 0.002 |
|  | ABD | ACD | 2.0475 | 3.8924 | 4.4 | 2.8 | 465.5235 | 464.1423 |  |  |  |
| 9 | BD | BD | 5.3883 | 5.7548 | 8.4 | 7.6 | 390.8981 | 397.7204 | BD | BD | 0.008 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 3.4575 | 4.5889 | 1 | 1.2 | 421.3202 | 411.4107 |  |  |  |
| 10 | BD | BD | 7.5865 | 7.9369 | 9.2 | 9.2 | 407.7313 | 407.0326 | BD | BD | 0.002 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 6.7918 | 7.3485 | 4.2 | 5.2 | 418.4133 | 415.3837 |  |  |  |

Figure 2.6: Case 3: Risk patterns for the proposed 2-way models


Figure 2.7 shows the suggested risk patterns for the proposed 3 -way interaction from both methods (for QMDR, only when $n=2000$ ). These risk patterns coincide with the one proposed for the 2-way interaction. However, our method selected the one that minimizes the prediction error six times out of ten. That is, OQMDR considers individuals from six different data sets with $A A b b d d, A a b b d d$, and aabbdd only at high risk when $A B D$ is selected (similarly, when $B C D$ is selected) as the best 3-way interaction (figure 2.7 a ). On the other hand, QMDR could not select a certain
risk pattern more than once, i.e., there was a distinct risk pattern for each simulated data set.

Figure 2.7: Case 3: Risk patterns for the proposed 3 -way models
(a) OQMDR

(b) QMDR


Eventually, as sample size increases, both methods steadily proposed the risk pattern of the chosen 2-way model described in figure 2.6. QMDR shows a higher $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ in eight out of ten different data sets. Likewise, OQMDR was able to capture the pattern shown in 2.7 a more frequently for the chosen 3 -way model. While QMDR failed to propose a frequent pattern when $n=1000$, it suggested the one shown in figure 2.7b from two different data sets of size $n=2000$.

Table 2.9: Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=1000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  |  |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR |  |
| 1 | BD | BD | 11.0682 | 7.8971 | 10 | 10 | 380.8382 | 125.639 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 10.4367 | 4.1576 | 9.4 | 0.6 | 383.8686 | 425.6393 |  |  |  |
|  | BD | BD | 12.9821 | 9.8492 | 10 | 10 | 2.2082 | 435.4096 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 11.4207 | 7.6621 | 7.4 | 2.2 | 433.6829 | 451.3270 |  |  |  |
| 3 | BD | BD | 6.3368 | 8.2012 | 7 | 10 | 442.1930 | 436.18 | BD | BD | 0.0 |
|  | ABD | BCD | 2.9712 | 6.5175 | 5 | 3.8 | 461.4515 | 448.9053 |  |  |  |
|  | BD | BD | 9.3511 | 6.7128 | 10 | 6.2 | 25.7843 | 439.5918 | ABD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | BD | 11.4646 | 5.7312 | 10 | 2.6 | 421.2707 | 446.2048 |  |  |  |
|  | BD | BD | 12.9657 | 6.7591 | 10 | 7.2 | 432.7799 | 474.0929 | BD | BD | 0.00 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 12.8884 | 6.2155 | 9.8 | 1.6 | 433.1348 | 479.1019 |  |  |  |
|  | BD | D | 1.3 | 8.804 | 10 | 9.4 | 370.0498 | 72 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | BCD | 8.7654 | 8.1114 | 8.8 | 4.2 | 375.9737 | 387.5567 |  |  |  |
|  | BD | BD | 10.283 | 6.830 | 10 | 8.2 | 8.8597 | 4.9 | BD | BD | 0.00 |
|  | ABD | BD | 0.283 | 6.7667 | 10 | 1.4 | 408.8597 | 436.3363 |  |  |  |
|  | BD | BD | 0232 | 8.0489 | 10 | 8.6 | 4.0 | 434.9144 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | BD | 8.6775 | 7.1249 | 4.2 | 1.6 | 429.7187 | 442.59 |  |  |  |
|  | BD | BD | 8.4548 | 8.4579 | 9.6 | 10 | 425.9161 | 425.80 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | BD | 5.7513 | 8.3393 | 5.2 | 5 | 438.4999 | 427.1634 |  |  |  |
|  | BD | BD | 8.5341 | 8.4838 | 9.4 | 9.4 | 419.9538 | 419.000 | BD | D | $0.000$ |
|  | BCD | BCD | 6.7 | 5.7 | 3 | 1.4 | 431.32 | 437.66 |  |  |  |

Table 2.10: Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=2000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | $\overline{\text { CVC }}$ |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | $p_{t}$ |
| 1 | BD | BD | 11.6430 | 11.8266 | 9.6 | 10 | 396.1322 | 394.8831 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 8.6305 | 10.7238 | 5.6 | 5.8 | 405.4561 | 399.2102 |  |  |  |
| 2 | BD | BD | 12.2938 | 14.0354 | 9.2 | 10 | 416.3105 | 415.0608 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | ABD | 11.8194 | 12.5054 | 9 | 4.6 | 417.2390 | 421.9241 |  |  |  |
| 3 | BD | BD | 14.3724 | 11.5847 | 10 | 10 | 392.2242 | 404.8032 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 14.3724 | 11.3747 | 10 | 6 | 392.2242 | 405.3948 |  |  |  |
| 4 | BD | BD | 13.5646 | 11.3259 | 10 | 10 | 387.7859 | 396.5111 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 13.5646 | 11.0208 | 10 | 5.6 | 387.7859 | 397.9806 |  |  |  |
| 5 | BD | BD | 19.5815 | 12.4247 | 10 | 10 | 406.9310 | 426.2756 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 19.5815 | 12.1834 | 10 | 5.4 | 406.9310 | 427.9580 |  |  |  |
| 6 | BD | BD | 13.5869 | 11.5905 | 10 | 10 | 412.4245 | 420.8890 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | BCD | 13.5869 | 10.2778 | 10 | 6.8 | 412.4245 | 426.7064 |  |  |  |
| 7 | BD | BD | 15.2050 | 12.1491 | 10 | 10 | 418.1521 | 429.5760 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | ABD | 15.2050 | 10.8154 | 10 | 3.4 | 418.1521 | 435.5389 |  |  |  |
| 8 | BD | BD | 15.3370 | 10.2874 | 10 | 10 | 401.5109 | 419.0839 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 15.3370 | 8.7304 | 10 | 2.8 | 401.5109 | 426.8023 |  |  |  |
| 9 | BD | BD | 16.1559 | 12.1680 | 10 | 10 | 414.2017 | 433.6866 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | ABD | 16.1559 | 10.5314 | 10 | 2.6 | 414.2017 | 441.7923 |  |  |  |
| 10 | BD | BD | 13.7691 | 8.4757 | 10 | 5.2 | 426.6336 | 456.4637 | BD | BD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 13.3682 | 7.6388 | 8.6 | 1.4 | 429.3549 | 460.3287 |  |  |  |

This case clearly shows the ability of the OQMDR method to capture the true

2-way model with the risk pattern that minimizes the prediction error comparing to the one selected by QMDR.

### 2.3.4 Case 4: True Model $=A B C$

In this case, we will inspect the behavior of both methods when the data is generated using a true 3 -way interaction with a vague risk pattern. That is, the data is generated using equation 2.4 to make much of the variation comes from a 3 -way interaction between $A, B$, and $C$ with the non-zero array $\beta_{123}$ shown below (equation 2.8). Similar to case 3, some individuals with a certain multilocus combination seem to be affected by the interaction but not to the point where they can be diagnosed at high risk. These individuals are the ones with a multilocus coefficient of 8 in $\beta_{123}$. Once again, we expect these individuals to be recognized at high risk of developing the disease when the data is analyzed using QMDR. On the other hand, we think that classifying these individuals at low risk could benefit the prediction error of the proposed model.

$$
\beta_{123}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 0  \tag{2.8}\\
0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 30
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 8 \\
0 & 8 & 30
\end{array}\right]
$$

Tables 2.11, 2.12, and 2.13 show the summarized result of all simulated data sets for this case. We can see from these tables that the OQMDR method is able to capture the true model with high $\overline{\mathrm{CVC}}$ from all generated data sets regardless of sample size. On the other hand, QMDR method couldn't spot the right interaction from two samples of size $n=500$. In addition, $\overline{\mathrm{CVC}}$ is too low for 3 -way models comparing to 2-way models, especially for small data sets. QMDR performance enhanced when $n=2000$ comparing to its performance with smaller samples. Even when QMDR
catches the true 3-way interaction as the best final model, the proposed risk pattern (figure 2.9b) still not similar to the one proposed by OQMDR (figure 2.9a). Therefore, the calculated $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ by QMDR is bigger in most cases comparing to the calculated $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ when our method is employed. The selected risk patterns for the 2 -way models (figure 2.8) coincide with the 3-way risk patterns suggested by both algorithms. All final models are statistically significant at $\alpha=0.05$.

Table 2.11: Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=500$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | CVC |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AB | AB | 8.1592 | 4.3038 | 9.6 | 5.2 | 449.3350 | 463.3199 | ABC | ABC | 0.004 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 9.4425 | 6.1780 | 10 | 1.6 | 425.6279 | 448.3547 |  |  |  |
| 2 | AC | AB | 6.7711 | 5.1319 | 7.8 | 3.0 | 491.2154 | 496.8703 | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 13.0731 | 5.5268 | 10 | 1.6 | 422.3193 | 493.7586 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AB | AB | 7.5528 | 6.7622 | 7.6 | 8. | 469.8370 | 474.9827 | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 12.1367 | 10.7735 | 8.2 | 7.6 | 390.6237 | 408.4659 |  |  |  |
|  | BC | BC | 7.2838 | 8.0747 | 8.2 | 9.6 | 443.4005 | 433.8597 | ABC | BC | 0.002 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 10.0161 | 7.6555 | 8.8 | 2 | 404.5911 | 443.1291 |  |  |  |
| 5 | AB | AB | 7.0792 | 7.2978 | 7.8 | 8.0 | 419.0948 | 414.6803 | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 9.4804 | 5.5522 | 6.2 | 1.8 | 388.8457 | 440.0572 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AC | BC | 7.9512 | 5.2632 | 10 | 8.4 | 414.9305 | 431.8647 | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 10.0555 | 5.4055 | 9.4 | 2.6 | 375.7701 | 433.6660 |  |  |  |
| 7 | AC | BC | 3.4077 | 3.8853 | 2.6 | 2.8 | 496.2005 | 488.5971 | ABC | ABC | 0.003 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 9.4207 | 6.0516 | 9.4 | 3.6 | 421.7769 | 465.6457 |  |  |  |
| 8 | AC | AC | 4.5705 | 6.1200 | 5.4 | 8.2 | 492.0345 | 481.0760 | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 7.3506 | 8.5925 | 3.8 | 4.6 | 464.3512 | 448.5742 |  |  |  |
| 9 | AB | AC | 7.5584 | 4.9344 | 9.2 | 6 | 413.3126 | 429.5232 | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 11.3497 | 9.1189 | 9.6 | 7 | 356.4875 | 378.7932 |  |  |  |
| 10 | AB | BC | 3.6775 | 7.3431 | 3 | 8.6 | 481.1166 | 445.0819 | ABC | BC | 0.000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 12.0756 | 7.0335 | 10 | 1.6 | 392.1839 | 454.1246 |  |  |  |

Figure 2.8: Case 4: Risk patterns for the proposed 2-way models


Figure 2.9: Case 4: Risk patterns for the proposed 3 -way models
(a) OQMDR


Table 2.12: Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=1000$

|  | Model | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | CVC |  | $\bar{c}$ MSPE |  | Best Model |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR |  |  |
| NEW | QMDR | $p_{t}$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |


| 1 | $\begin{gathered} \hline \hline \mathrm{AB} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \\ \hline \end{gathered}$ | AC | 5.3255 <br> 14.6746 | $\begin{gathered} 9.2554 \\ 10.3055 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline \hline 5.6 \\ & 9.2 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline 10 \\ & 1.6 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 437.9143 \\ 375.0088 \\ \hline \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 415.8413 \\ 406.6042 \end{array}$ | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 2 | AC | AB | 8.147 | 8.0186 | 7.2 | 6.4 | 477.4761 | 475.508 | ABC | ABC | 0.00 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 16.5818 | 9.497 | 10 | 1.4 | 405.113 | 465.0 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AB | AC | 2362 | 位 | 5.2 |  | 468.3818 | 0 | ABC | ABC | 0.00 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 5.286 | 10.33 | 10 | 3.2 | 3 | 42 |  |  |  |
|  | AC | BC | 1.010 | 8.191 | 9.8 |  | 91.1019 | 50 | ABC | ABC | 0.00 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 16.609 | 9.557 | 10 | 1.4 | 428.3 | 489.5901 |  |  |  |
| 5 | ABC | ABC | 14.3892 | 12 | 3.4 | 7.4 | 464.496 |  | ABC | ABC | 0.00 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 14.3892 | 12.0804 | 10 | 10 | 399.3435 | 417.3327 |  |  |  |
|  | AB | BC | 7195 | 7.498 | 7.6 | 4.4 | 520.3213 | 517.9386 | ABC | ABC | 0.00 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 15.5735 | 10.757 | 8 | 2.8 | 447.62 | 484.11 |  |  |  |
|  | ABC | AC | 1.18 | 9.2312 | 9.8 |  | . 17 | 466.6482 | ABC | ABC |  |
|  | ABC | ABC | 16.8849 | 14.087 | 10 | 6.6 | 8.71 | 419.25 |  |  |  |
|  | AC | AC | 8.0931 | 7.9 | 5.2 |  | 476.6604 | 4 | ABC | AB | 0.00 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 15.2774 | 9.7153 | 10 | 1.6 | 410.097 | 454.59 |  |  |  |
|  | AC | B | 8.4073 | 6.0474 | 4.8 | 5.2 | 507.5589 |  | BC | BC | . 00 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 16.8113 | 11.807 | 10 | 5 | 419.8534 | 460.1074 |  |  |  |
|  | BC | BC | 8.9735 | 7.2974 | 9 | 6.6 | 459.5296 | 465.8615 | ABC | ABC | 000 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 14.377 | 10.557 | 10 | 4.8 | 409.0999 | 439.56 |  |  |  |

Table 2.13: Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=2000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | CVC |  | MSPE |  | Best Model |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | $p_{t}$ |
| 1 | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline \hline \mathrm{AC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline \hline \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 12.7407 \\ & 26.5165 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline 13.3746 \\ & 18.2417 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline 4.6 \\ & 10 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline \hline 7 \\ 7.6 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline 493.361 \\ & 406.868 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 480.8834 \\ & 445.3642 \end{aligned}$ | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
| 2 | $\begin{gathered} \mathrm{AC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 13.9946 \\ 23.1537 \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 10.7861 \\ 17.0146 \end{array}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 8.8 \\ & 10 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 5.4 \\ & 8.2 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 483.6113 \\ 410.5839 \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} 493.7696 \\ 451.5221 \end{array}$ | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
| 3 | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline 14.4859 \\ & 21.8987 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline 9.3923 \\ 16.9541 \\ \hline \end{array}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 10 \\ & 10 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} 5.4 \\ 8 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 475.9016 \\ 413.9034 \\ \hline \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 491.8175 \\ 444.4705 \end{array}$ | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
| 4 | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} \mathrm{AB} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 12.6492 \\ & 22.9638 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 11.7796 \\ 17.1027 \end{array}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 7.8 \\ & 10 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 7.8 \\ & 9.6 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 512.8168 \\ 435.1123 \end{array}$ | 507.7509 470.0695 | ABC | ABC | 0.0 |
| 5 | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} \mathrm{AB} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 13.9567 \\ & 20.6543 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 11.5544 \\ & 15.9273 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 10 \\ & 10 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 9.4 \\ & 4.2 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 484.6121 \\ 427.4643 \end{array}$ | 488.8457 454.6603 | ABC | ABC | 0.00 |
| 6 | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline \mathrm{AB} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 16.9326 \\ 24.7238 \\ \hline \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 14.4704 \\ 19.1987 \end{array}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 10 \\ & 10 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \hline 10 \\ & 5.4 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 499.1951 \\ 425.9687 \\ \hline \end{array}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 495.6421 \\ & 457.8688 \\ & \hline \end{aligned}$ | ABC | ABC | 0.0 |
| 7 | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline \mathrm{AB} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} \mathrm{AB} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 14.7683 \\ & 23.5707 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{l\|} \hline 12.1203 \\ 17.4366 \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} 9.2 \\ 10 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 8.4 \\ & 9.4 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 469.6782 \\ 404.9740 \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 471.5572 \\ 437.7395 \end{array}$ | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
| 8 | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline \mathrm{AC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} \mathrm{AB} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline 9.1476 \\ 22.8113 \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 13.0252 \\ 17.1016 \end{array}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 7.6 \\ & 10 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 8.4 \\ & 4.2 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 509.5984 \\ 428.3051 \\ \hline \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} \hline 494.44 \\ 464.533 \end{gathered}$ | ABC | ABC | 0.00 |
| 9 | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{array}$ | BC | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 14.6272 \\ 22.4449 \end{array}$ | 10.3086 17.8233 | 10 10 | $\begin{aligned} & 4.4 \\ & 8.4 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline 473.948 \\ 418.9029 \\ \hline \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline 489.892 \\ 441.5572 \\ \hline \end{array}$ | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |
| 10 | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{array}$ | $\begin{gathered} \mathrm{BC} \\ \mathrm{ABC} \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 11.6949 \\ 21.8562 \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 12.5488 \\ 17.5682 \\ \hline \end{array}$ | $\begin{aligned} & 4.6 \\ & 10 \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{gathered} 6 \\ 8.6 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{array}{\|l\|} \hline 455.6321 \\ 394.3332 \end{array}$ | $\begin{array}{\|c\|} \hline 452.4679 \\ 418.256 \end{array}$ | ABC | ABC | 0.000 |

The last two cases show that OQMDR method is superior to QMDR method in terms of selecting the true model with a more realistic risk pattern that minimizes the prediction error. However, OQMDR algorithm, similar to QMDR, attributes the variation in the continuous phenotype to a single interaction, which is usually the most significant interaction. In the following two cases, we will investigate the drawback of capturing the true model when the true model comprises multiple genegene interactions.

### 2.3.5 Case 5: True Models $=A B$ and $A D$

We generated the data sets in accordance with equation 2.3 with the non-zero matrices $\alpha_{12}$ and $\alpha_{14}$ given in 2.9 and 2.10 , receptively. The way we generated the data makes the variation mainly due to the 2 -way interaction between factors $A$ and $D$. It also attributes a considerable portion of the variation to the 2 -way interaction between factors $A$ and $B$, but not as potent as $A D$; however, it should be easily
recognizable. Hence, we have two different 2-way interactions that can be deemed as the primary sources of the variation in the continuous variable. Since OQMDR and QMDR algorithms can only propose a single most significant interaction, we expect the 2-way interaction between $A$ and $D$, and the 3 -way interaction between $A, B$, and $D$ to be detected as the best 2 -way and best 3 -way models, respectively. Notice that factor $A$ is a common factor in both true 2-way interactions, therefore, if we combine the effects of the two 2 -way interactions, we could end up with a true 3 -way interaction of $A B D$ with the coefficient array given in 2.11 . In fact, the means of the cells with coefficients of 15 in $\beta_{124}$ defined in 2.11 are slightly lower than 139.44 , the overall fixed mean of the response variable. In this case, we expect OQMDR, opposite to QMDR, to propose a 3-way interaction with a risk pattern that deems these cells at high risk rather than low risk, and this will likely benefit the prediction error afterward.

$$
\begin{gather*}
\alpha_{12}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
15 & 15 & 15 \\
15 & 0 & 0 \\
15 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right]  \tag{2.9}\\
\alpha_{14}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 20 \\
0 & 0 & 20 \\
20 & 20 & 20
\end{array}\right] \\
\beta_{124}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
15 & 0 & 20 \\
15 & 0 & 20
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
15 & 15 & 35 \\
15 & 0 & 20 \\
15 & 0 & 20
\end{array}\right]\left[\left[\begin{array}{lll}
35 & 35 & 35 \\
35 & 20 & 20 \\
35 & 20 & 20
\end{array}\right]\right.
\end{gather*}
$$

Simulation results summarized in tables 2.14, 2.15, and 2.16 show the struggle of
both algorithms to spot a consistent model, particularly for small data sets. However, both algorithms can recognize $A D$ more frequently than $A B$ as the single most significant 2-way interaction, which agrees with the original model used to generate the data. Similarly for the 3 -way models, the interaction $A B D$ is almost always selected as the best 3 -way model. In many cases, OQMDR favors the 3 -way model $A B D$ over the 2-way model $A D$, which could be considered as an evidence of the ability of the OQMDR method to detect most of the significant variations in the response variable, which in turn, reduces the prediction error. Besides the struggle of choosing the same model repeatedly, the two methods also struggled to select a typical risk pattern for both studied orders of interaction for small samples. With the sample size gets larger, the outcomes of selecting the 2-way models become more stable, and both algorithms propose $A D$ with the same risk pattern shown in figure 2.10. While for 3way models, a more frequent risk pattern (figure 2.11a), that coincides with the array in 2.11 , is steadily selected when OQMDR algorithm is used. Figure 2.11 b shows the most frequent risk pattern suggested by QMDR, which does not recognize cells with coefficients of 15 in $\beta_{124}$ given in 2.11 at high risk. Clearly, the risk pattern shown in figure 2.11a is enhancing the $\overline{\mathrm{MSPE}}$ for models suggested by OQMDR comparing to QMDR. The final assessment shows a statistical significance for all selected models under $\alpha=0.05$ level of significance.

Table 2.14: Case 5: True models $=A B$ and $A D$, and $n=500$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  |  |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AD | AD | 11.7314 | 9.7983 | 10 | 4.4 | 440.3874 | 468.9433 | AD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 9.4894 | 10.6699 | 3.2 | 3.4 | 468.8971 | 456.4106 |  |  |  |
| 2 | AD | AD | 9.2082 | 8.9597 | 9.8 | 9.4 | 398.6205 | 400.5740 | AD | AD | 0.003 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 5.4320 | 7.7104 | 1.4 | 2.4 | 431.8312 | 418.2683 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AD | AD | 6.5039 | 7.2341 | 7.2 | 7 | 473.7473 | 465.9969 | AD | AD | 0.008 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 5.0696 | 6.1065 | 0.2 | 1.6 | 495.1787 | 484.8954 |  |  |  |
| 4 | AD | AD | 10.2775 | 10.1762 | 10 | 9.8 | 479.6339 | 482.1524 | AD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 8.7677 | 7.7517 | 5.0 | 1.8 | 505.1238 | 522.5698 |  |  |  |
| 5 | AD | AD | 6.1591 | 5.8608 | 2.6 | 4.6 | 476.7516 | 478.0475 | ABD | ABD | 0.004 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 7.3457 | 8.0023 | 2.4 | 3 | 461.2534 | 452.2448 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AD | AD | 9.4226 | 9.3614 | 8 | 8.2 | 467.8078 | 468.3114 | AD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 7.9864 | 7.3039 | 5.2 | 0.6 | 473.1573 | 503.1038 |  |  |  |
| 7 | AD | AD | 9.6197 | 9.9817 | 7.2 | 9 | 431.1400 | 426.8027 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 10.5822 | 11.1982 | 2.2 | 6.8 | 419.0597 | 409.5560 |  |  |  |
| 8 | AD | AD | 10.5357 | 9.2378 | 10 | 5.8 | 419.6213 | 435.2594 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 11.5489 | 8.3165 | 9.6 | 1.2 | 407.8584 | 452.2779 |  |  |  |
| 9 | AB | AB | 10.4754 | 10.7267 | 9.2 | 9.6 | 427.7591 | 423.9420 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 12.0899 | 9.6891 | 8.2 | 2.2 | 409.9213 | 442.8068 |  |  |  |
| 10 | AD | AD | 8.3815 | 7.6558 | 5.8 | 4 | 478.9403 | 495.3767 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ACD | 11.4136 | 7.5647 | 9 | 2.6 | 439.0593 | 498.6284 |  |  |  |

Figure 2.10: Case 5: Risk pattern for the proposed 2-way models


Figure 2.11: Case 5: Risk patterns for the proposed 3-way models


Table 2.15: Case 5: True model $=A B$ and $A D$, and $n=1000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  |  |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AD | AD | 13.2596 | 13.1028 | 6.8 | 5 | 425.0486 | 429.4854 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 13.4813 | 14.4820 | 2.4 | 5.4 | 424.7562 | 417.4259 |  |  |  |
| 2 | AD | AD | 12.9223 | 13.6241 | 7.2 | 9.4 | 440.5278 | 434.3656 | AD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABC | 12.1719 | 12.8069 | 3 | 5.6 | 447.2645 | 443.1458 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AD | AD | 13.4657 | 12.6078 | 10 | 8.8 | 425.9823 | 432.2383 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 14.9638 | 10.6318 | 10 | 0.8 | 417.5412 | 454.2127 |  |  |  |
| 4 | AD | AD | 13.8768 | 12.6944 | 9.4 | 5.6 | 438.6083 | 450.0987 | AD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 12.7438 | 13.3979 | 3.4 | 2 | 447.9546 | 443.7380 |  |  |  |
| 5 | AD | AD | 13.7833 | 13.1832 | 9.8 | 8.2 | 501.0047 | 507.0657 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 14.8234 | 13.2919 | 6 | 2 | 492.5713 | 508.7934 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AD | AD | 13.7852 | 11.8361 | 10 | 4.8 | 471.9331 | 489.2642 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 14.1047 | 11.9281 | 5 | 3.4 | 471.0434 | 489.4899 |  |  |  |
| 7 | AB | AB | 9.6469 | 9.7269 | 5.2 | 5.6 | 439.6363 | 437.3603 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 13.3888 | 9.6629 | 9.6 | 1 | 405.5949 | 443.5348 |  |  |  |
| 8 | AD | AD | 13.2426 | 11.9883 | 9.6 | 8 | 415.0823 | 422.7717 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 13.6737 | 11.7685 | 8.2 | 3.4 | 416.6501 | 425.1808 |  |  |  |
| 9 | AD | AD | 14.8311 | 14.8311 | 10 | 10 | 407.6052 | 407.4881 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABC | 15.3357 | 13.1694 | 5.6 | 4 | 402.7284 | 422.4762 |  |  |  |
| 10 | AD | AD | 11.7728 | 11.8629 | 6.8 | 6.2 | 459.4256 | 459.6078 | AD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ACD | 11.5622 | 11.7843 | 8.8 | 1.4 | 451.3953 | 460.4617 |  |  |  |

Table 2.16: Case 5: True model $=A B$ and $A D$, and $n=2000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | CVC |  | MSPE |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR |  |
| 1 | AD | AD | 19.5487 | 18.2254 | 10 | 6.8 | 436.7792 | 445.8609 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 21.0317 | 17.6228 | 7.4 | 1.8 | 426.0936 | 451.9332 |  |  |  |
| 2 | AD | AD | 20.7218 | 20.7218 | 10 | 10 | 430.2648 | 430.3555 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 22.2465 | 19.4373 | 10 | 4.6 | 425.5934 | 439.8688 |  |  |  |
| 3 | AD | AD | 18.4839 | 16.9137 | . 6 | 5.2 | 457.5057 | 468.3477 | AD | ACD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ACD | 18.4156 | 17.3341 | 8.2 | 3.4 | 459.2096 | 465.4065 |  |  |  |
| 4 | AD | AD | 15.6074 | 15.4906 | 8.4 | 6.8 | 472.9608 | 474.4019 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 17.3775 | 15.0600 | 5.8 | 1.8 | 456.6554 | 477.7161 |  |  |  |
| 5 | AD | AD | 18.2416 | 19.0254 | 7.4 | 10 | 442.8265 | 436.8549 | AD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ACD | 17.1150 | 17.4120 | 7.2 | 5.2 | 441.0806 | 447.5459 |  |  |  |
| 6 | AD | AD | 16.6251 | 17.6843 | 4.6 | 7.6 | 443.2278 | 438.9623 | ABD | ACD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ACD | 19.9968 | 18.1588 | 4.6 | 6 | 425.5457 | 436.0290 |  |  |  |
| 7 | AD | AD | 19.8670 | 18.7648 | 10 | 6.6 | 452.6704 | 459.0022 | ABD | ABD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 22.0097 | 19.1501 | 10 | 2.8 | 442.1378 | 456.0802 |  |  |  |
| 8 | AD | AD | 19.5662 | 18.8089 | 9.2 | 6.4 | 483.2015 | 488.6749 | ABD | ACD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ACD | 21.0144 | 19.1270 | 9.6 | 5.2 | 476.8636 | 487.4600 |  |  |  |
| 9 | AD | D | 18.8469 | 19.3615 | 7.4 | 10 | 465.6927 | 461.9549 | ABD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 20.9963 | 17.1455 | 7.4 | 2.2 | 453.7394 | 478.1857 |  |  |  |
| 10 | AD | AD | 19.2096 | 19.2096 | 10 | 10 | 431.6748 | 431.8430 | AD | AD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 19.1753 | 18.5053 | 6 | 3.4 | 435.6491 | 437.3304 |  |  |  |

### 2.3.6 Case 6: True Models $=A B$ and $C D$

In this last simulated scenario, we intend to examine the OQMDR behavior when there are two distinct 2 -way interactions affecting the response, i.e., no common factor between the two interactions. Hence, the model given in equation 2.3 is utilized along with the non-zero matrices $\alpha_{12}$ and $\alpha_{34}$ listed in 2.12 and 2.13 , respectively, to generate the response variable such that certain combinations of $A B$ and $C D$ are causing the variation. Once again, none of the two algorithms can report a set of the most significant interactions; therefore, $C D$ is expected to be selected as the most significant 2-way interaction because it has more weight on the $Y$. However, due to the drawback of both algorithms to capture more than one interaction, it's feasible to end up with an interaction that does not agree with any of the components of the actual model. Notice that the effects of both 2-way interactions can be combined to form a single 4 -way interaction with the array $\gamma_{1234}$ shown in 2.14 . Accordingly, the all-way interaction has a higher chance to be proposed over lower order interactions. However, we only consider all possible 2-way and 3 -way interactions; thus, all-way interactions are not an area of interest in this study.

$$
\begin{align*}
& \alpha_{12}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 15 \\
0 & 0 & 15 \\
15 & 15 & 15
\end{array}\right]  \tag{2.12}\\
& \alpha_{34}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 20 \\
0 & 0 & 20 \\
20 & 20 & 20
\end{array}\right] \tag{2.13}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\gamma_{1234}=\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
{\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 15 \\
0 & 0 & 15 \\
15 & 15 & 15
\end{array}\right]!\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 15 \\
0 & 0 & 15 \\
15 & 15 & 15
\end{array}\right]:\left[\begin{array}{lll}
20 & 20 & 35 \\
20 & 20 & 35 \\
35 & 35 & 35
\end{array}\right]}  \tag{2.14}\\
{\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 15 \\
0 & 0 & 15 \\
15 & 15 & 15
\end{array}\right]!\left[\begin{array}{lll}
0 & 0 & 15 \\
0 & 0 & 15 \\
15 & 15 & 15
\end{array}\right]!\left[\begin{array}{lll}
20 & 20 & 35 \\
20 & 20 & 35 \\
35 & 35 & 35
\end{array}\right]} \\
{\left[\begin{array}{lll}
20 & 20 & 35 \\
20 & 20 & 35 \\
35 & 35 & 35
\end{array}\right]!\left[\begin{array}{lll}
20 & 20 & 35 \\
20 & 20 & 35 \\
35 & 35 & 35
\end{array}\right]!\left[\begin{array}{lll}
20 & 20 & 35 \\
20 & 20 & 35 \\
35 & 35 & 35
\end{array}\right]}
\end{array}\right]
$$

Simulation results in tables 2.17, 2.17, and 2.17 show that the 2-way interaction $C D$ is almost always selected from both algorithms, regardless of sample size. Notice that the $\overline{\mathrm{MSPE}}$ of the 2-way model is smaller, in most samples, comparing to the $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ of the proposed 3-way interactions; yet, it is not as small as the $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ for previous cases. The reason why the $\overline{\mathrm{MSPE}}$ is higher in this scenario is that the suggested interaction does not explain all the distinction in the response variable. On the other hand, both algorithms selected $A C D$ or $B C D$ as the best 3 -way interaction, which agrees with the actual model to some extent, because CD is stronger in the real model than the other 2-way. Figure 2.12 shows that the risk pattern of the proposed 2-way interaction coincides with the coefficients in $\alpha_{34}$ shown in 2.10. Finally, permutation testing shows a statistical significance of all proposed model under $\alpha=0.05$.

Table 2.17: Case 6: True model $=A B$ and $C D$, and $n=500$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | CVC |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR |  |
| 1 | BD | AB | 9.0069 | 7.0102 | 9.8 | 7.2 | 473.8596 | 473.471 | BD | ABD | 0.001 |
|  | BCD | ABD | 4.0438 | 10.7973 | 8.8 | 5.8 | 503.8610 | 422.9145 |  |  |  |
| 2 | CD | CD | 11.8300 | 11.8300 | 10 | 10 | 489.5151 | 489.5151 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 9.2065 | 10.3003 | 2 | 4.8 | 539.7714 | 517.0491 |  |  |  |
| 3 | CD | CD | 10.6991 | 10.6991 | 10 | 10 | 440.9293 | 440.9293 | CD | CD | 0.002 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 8.5849 | 9.7989 | 2 | 5.8 | 473.0339 | 453.8657 |  |  |  |
| 4 | CD | CD | 11.3164 | 11.3164 | 10 | 10 | 475.2049 | 475.2049 | CD | CD | 0.001 |
|  | BCD | ACD | 6.6323 | 9.1011 | 2.4 | 3 | 552.0917 | 512.3414 |  |  |  |
| 5 | CD | CD | 10.0542 | 10.313 | 9.6 | 10 | 452.8280 | 447.6891 | CD | CD | 0.001 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 9.1363 | 8.9036 | 3.6 | 2.6 | 466.6728 | 470.9822 |  |  |  |
| 6 | CD | CD | 8.9645 | 9.0815 | 9.8 | 10 | 457.8634 | 456.4878 | CD | CD | 0.003 |
|  | ABC | ABC | 5.6587 | 7.9537 | 3.2 | 6.6 | 496.4742 | 474.6744 |  |  |  |
| 7 | CD | CD | 11.4007 | 11.4007 | 10 | 10 | 462.4258 | 462.4258 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 9.7958 | 10.1877 | 3.4 | 4.8 | 490.1020 | 484.1013 |  |  |  |
| 8 | CD | CD | 10.4819 | 10.4819 | 10 | 10 | 476.3193 | 476.3193 | ACD | ACD | 0.001 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 10.9939 | 10.7249 | 6.8 | 6.6 | 466.1766 | 470.4285 |  |  |  |
| 9 | CD | CD | 10.9124 | 10.9124 | 10 | 10 | 424.9754 | 424.9754 | CD | ACD | 0.002 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 10.6844 | 11.0481 | 6.6 | 7.4 | 429.7659 | 423.9798 |  |  |  |
| 10 | CD | D | 7.7286 | 7.5909 | 5.6 | 5.4 | 489.9941 | 490.2981 | BCD | BCD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 10.0815 | 10.4887 | 5.8 | 7.4 | 449.8219 | 444.0032 |  |  |  |

Figure 2.12: Case 6: Risk pattern for the proposed 2-way models


Figure 2.13: Case 6: Risk pattern for the proposed 3-way models


Table 2.18: Case 6: True model $=A B$ and $C D$, and $n=1000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | $\overline{\text { CVC }}$ |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  | $p_{t}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR |  |
| 1 | CD | CD | 15.8692 | 15.8692 | 10 | 10 | 446.3464 | 446.3464 | ACD | ACD | 0.000 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 15.8810 | 16.3463 | 4.6 | 8.6 | 447.6558 | 441.7190 |  |  |  |
| 2 | CD | CD | 15.4883 | 15.4883 | 10 | 10 | 9.9703 | 439.9 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 13.4539 | 13.4441 | 3.4 | 2.2 | 463.9966 | 463.3633 |  |  |  |
| 3 | CD | CD | 14.9038 | 14.9038 | 10 | 10 | 405.4913 | 405.491 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 14.0032 | 13.4048 | 7.2 | 5.2 | 414.6212 | 419.7204 |  |  |  |
| 4 | CD | CD | 14.8358 | 14.8358 | 10 | 10 | 460.2263 | 460.22 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 14.0720 | 14.3682 | 2.2 | 1 | 469.7958 | 465.2314 |  |  |  |
| 5 | CD | CD | 14.7896 | 14.7896 | 10 | 10 | 429.2789 | 429.2789 | CD | ACD | 0.000 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 14.1741 | 14.8106 | 7.6 | 9 | 436.9781 | 429.8223 |  |  |  |
| 6 | CD | CD | 13.3759 | 13.3759 | 10 | 10 | 450.7268 | 450.72 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | ABD | ABD | 12.2997 | 13.0095 | 4.6 | 5.2 | 461.1326 | 452.5986 |  |  |  |
| 7 | CD | CD | 11.1334 | 10.8941 | 9.2 | 9 | 494.0292 | 496.4412 | BCD | BCD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 11.0531 | 11.1747 | 5.8 | 3.8 | 492.6775 | 492.4458 |  |  |  |
| 8 | CD | CD | 15.0628 | 15.0628 | 10 | 10 | 463.5435 | 463.5435 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 14.7724 | 13.8812 | 6.4 | 5.2 | 467.5203 | 477.2938 |  |  |  |
| 9 | CD | CD | 14.5080 | 14.5080 | 10 | 10 | 478.4491 | 478.4491 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 13.4828 | 13.8369 | 5.8 | 5.6 | 489.0802 | 486.0552 |  |  |  |
| 10 | CD | CD | 15.5132 | 15.5132 | 10 | 10 | 440.6888 | 440.688 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 14.8498 | 14.1504 | 6 | 4.2 | 448.3133 | 456.509 |  |  |  |

Table 2.19: Case 6: True model $=A B$ and $C D$, and $n=2000$

|  | Model |  | $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  | $\overline{\text { CVC }}$ |  | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |  | Best Model |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | NEW | QMDR | $p_{t}$ |
| 1 | CD | CD | 21.1057 | 21.1057 | 10 | 10 | 430.2597 | 430.2597 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 20.0069 | 20.1394 | 3 | 6.6 | 438.8670 | 437.5555 |  |  |  |
| 2 | CD | CD | 20.1353 | 20.1353 | 10 | 10 | 473.6575 | 473.6575 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 18.3900 | 18.7932 | 2.2 | 3.4 | 486.3417 | 483.3645 |  |  |  |
| 3 | CD | CD | 22.0497 | 22.0497 | 10 | 10 | 455.8369 | 455.8369 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 20.7965 | 18.8983 | 5.6 | 2.4 | 466.3449 | 481.0303 |  |  |  |
| 4 | CD | CD | 21.8425 | 21.8425 | 10 | 10 | 467.6960 | 467.6960 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 20.8895 | 21.7709 | 4.2 | 7.0 | 475.5016 | 467.9811 |  |  |  |
| 5 | CD | CD | 21.8637 | 21.8637 | 10 | 10 | 431.9311 | 431.9311 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 20.4798 | 20.1306 | 3.6 | 5.8 | 442.8755 | 444.8904 |  |  |  |
| 6 | CD | CD | 20.8501 | 20.8501 | 10 | 10 | 435.0721 | 435.0721 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 19.9172 | 19.2205 | 4.2 | 2.8 | 442.4099 | 448.0044 |  |  |  |
| 7 | CD | CD | 20.1937 | 20.1937 | 10 | 10 | 460.0336 | 460.0336 | ACD | ACD | 0.000 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 20.7405 | 20.9611 | 8 | 9.6 | 455.9089 | 454.3679 |  |  |  |
| 8 | CD | CD | 20.9419 | 20.9419 | 10 | 10 | 469.1425 | 469.1425 | CD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 19.1011 | 19.0341 | 2.2 | 3.8 | 483.0796 | 483.8075 |  |  |  |
| 9 | CD | CD | 19.8520 | 19.8520 | 10 | 10 | 442.7585 | 442.7585 | ACD | CD | 0.000 |
|  | ACD | ACD | 20.4027 | 18.5823 | 8.6 | 3.2 | 440.0263 | 452.3520 |  |  |  |
| 10 | CD | CD | 19.9674 | 19.9674 | 10 | 10 | 456.0138 | 456.0138 | BCD | BCD | 0.000 |
|  | BCD | BCD | 20.7447 | 20.2638 | 7 | 5.4 | 450.4488 | 453.7931 |  |  |  |

Finally, it's important to mention that all proposed models from applying the

QMDR algorithm showed a statistical significance at $\alpha=0.05$, regardless of whether they minimize the prediction error or not.

Copyright ${ }^{\text {© }}$ Zaid T. Al-Khaledi, 2019.

## Chapter 3 Modification of The OQMDR Algorithm

### 3.1 Preliminary

In chapter 2, we presented our new suggested algorithm to analyze genetic data sets with a continuous phenotypic response. We showed that the risk patterns of the proposed models by the OQMDR algorithm minimize the prediction error (smaller MSPE) compared to the risk patterns of the models suggested by the QMDR algorithm when both methods are applied to same data sets. However, taking into account the new algorithm digs deeper into the data to detect the final risk pattern for each interaction, the computation time can be substantial. Recalling that the OQMDR algorithm, similar to MDR and some other MDR-based algorithms, uses 1000 permutation testings to justify the significance of the final model. Therefore, this part of the algorithm has the lion's share when talking about time consumption. Besides, the computational burden gets heavier with bigger data sets. It is also affected by the complexity of the examined models. Coding experience shows that evaluating a 3 -way model requires almost twice the time as long as a 2 -way model does with the same data set analyzed on the same machine. Accordingly, finding a time-efficient replacement procedure to the permutation testing may benefit the proposed approach.

In 2009, Pattin et al. [48], and later in 2010, Hua et al. [30] both introduced a time-effective procedure that uses a theory-based technique to evaluate the proposed model instead of using the regular machine learning procedure. They suggested using the Generalized Extreme Value Distribution (GEVD), described by Jenkinson in 1955 [32], as an approximated theoretical distribution of the test statistic of the proposed model. The suggested approach does not eliminate the permutation testing procedure completely; instead, it reduces the number of permuted data sets required to assess the
final model to 20 permutations [48], or at most 50 permutations [30]. The idea behind employing the GEVD to evaluate the final model is merely based on the fact that the statistic of the final model is chosen as the maximum of all computed statistics of all examined models. Hence, we can generate a set of permuted maximized statistics to estimate the parameters of the approximated theoretical distribution of the original maximized statistic. Since we are choosing between models by optimizing over the testing $t$-score in our work, we think that utilizing the GEVD is applicable, and it would likely improve the computation speed of our algorithm.

### 3.2 The Generalized Extreme Value Distribution

The Generalized Extreme Value Distribution (GEVD) initially described by Jenkinson in 1955 [32] is used to model the maximum (or minimum) of a sequence of independent and identically distributed random variables. That is, let $X_{1}, X_{2}, X_{3}, \ldots$ be a sequence of independent and identically distributed random variables. And define $Y_{n}$ to be the largest order statistic:

$$
Y_{n}:=\max \left(X_{1}, X_{2}, \ldots, X_{n}\right) \forall n \in \mathbb{Z}^{+}
$$

Then for some constants $a_{n}>0$ and $b_{n} \in \mathbb{R}$, we have $\left(Y_{n}-b_{n}\right) / a_{n}$ has a limiting distribution called the Generalized Extreme Value distribution with the cumulative distribution function (CDF) given in equation 3.1[15]. That is:

$$
P\left(\frac{Y_{n}-b_{n}}{a_{n}} \leq y\right) \longrightarrow F_{Y}(y), \text { as } n \rightarrow \infty
$$

where $F$ is the CDF of the GEVD and it is defined as follows:

$$
F_{Y}(y)=\left\{\begin{array}{cc}
\exp \left[-\left(1+\xi \frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right)^{-1 / \xi}\right] & \text { for } \xi \neq 0  \tag{3.1}\\
\exp \left[-\exp \left(-\frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right)\right] & \text { for } \xi=0
\end{array}\right.
$$

defined on $1+\xi\left(\frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right)>0$ for $\xi \neq 0$, and $y \in(-\infty, \infty)$ for $\xi=0$, where $\mu \in(-\infty, \infty)$ is the location parameter, $\sigma>0$ is the scale parameter, and $\xi \in(-\infty, \infty)$ is the shape parameter of the distribution. In fact, three different distributions can be derived from the GEVD. These distributions are Weibull distribution when $\xi<0$, Fréchet distribution when $\xi>0$, and Gumbel distribution as $\xi \rightarrow 0$ [15]. Some references $[32,11]$ use a different parametrization to the one shown in equation 3.1 by defining the shape parameter as $k=-\xi$. This reparametrization does not affect the maximum likelihood estimates of the parameters except for the sign of the estimated value of the shape parameter, $\hat{\xi}$. In this work, we will consider the parametrization given in equation (3.1) when deriving the maximum likelihood estimators of the GEVD. Adequate changes are considered when we used R functions that rely on the alternative parametrization.

The mean, the variance, and the skewness of a random variable following the GEVD can be obtained as follows [22]:

$$
\text { Mean }=\left\{\begin{array}{cc}
\mu+\sigma \frac{g_{1}-1}{\xi} & \text { if } \xi \neq 0, \xi<1  \tag{3.2}\\
\mu+\sigma \gamma & \text { if } \xi=0 \\
\infty & \text { if } \xi \geq 1
\end{array}\right.
$$

$$
\begin{gather*}
\text { Variance }=\left\{\begin{array}{cc}
\sigma^{2}+\frac{g_{2}-g_{1}^{2}}{\xi^{2}} & \text { if } \xi \neq 0, \xi<0.5 \\
\sigma^{2} \frac{\pi}{6} & \text { if } \xi=0 \\
\infty & \text { if } \xi \geq 0.5
\end{array}\right.  \tag{3.3}\\
\text { Skewness }=\left\{\begin{array}{cc}
\operatorname{sgn}(\xi) \frac{g_{3}-3 g_{1} g_{2}+2 g_{1}^{3}}{\left(g_{2}-g_{1}^{2}\right)^{3 / 2}} & \text { if } \xi \neq 0, \xi<\frac{1}{3} \\
\frac{12 \sqrt{6} \zeta(3)}{\pi^{3}} & \text { if } \xi=0 \\
\infty & \text { if } \xi \geq \frac{1}{3}
\end{array}\right. \tag{3.4}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $g_{i}=\Gamma(1-i \xi)$ for $i=1,2,3, \ldots, \gamma$ is the Euler's constant, $\operatorname{sgn}(\cdot)$ is the sign function, and $\zeta(x)=\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^{-x}$ is the Euler-Riemann zeta function.

We will make use of these three measures to initiate the estimation process of the parameters of the GEVD.

### 3.3 Parameter Estimation

The Generalized Extreme Value distribution with the CDF given in equation 3.1 has three parameters, the location $\mu$, the shape $\sigma$, and the scale $\xi$. These parameters can be estimated by the Probability-Weighted Moments method [29], or the maximum likelihood estimator (MLE) method [47, 49, 34]. The estimation procedure has to be done numerically, for example by using the multivariate version of the NewtonRaphson algorithm [38] because the derivatives of the log-likelihood cannot be solved for the three parameters. Otherwise, we may use the profile likelihood function with a fixed range of values assigned to $\xi$, then calculate the regular MLE's of the other two functions [15]. In this work, the analytical approach is utilized to obtain the MLE's of the three parameters. To proceed with the calculation of the MLE's, we need to derive the formulas of the gradient vector, $g(\theta)$, and the inverse of the Hessian matrix
of the log-likelihood, $H^{-1}$. Next, we calculate the MLE's iteratively according to the formula defined in 3.5 below:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\theta}_{t}=\hat{\theta}_{t-1}-H^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}_{t-1}\right) g\left(\hat{\theta}_{t-1}\right) \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where:

$$
\begin{gathered}
\theta=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
\mu & \sigma & \xi
\end{array}\right]^{\prime} \\
g(\theta)=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
\frac{\partial l(\theta)}{\partial \mu} & \frac{\partial l(\theta)}{\partial \sigma} & \frac{\partial l(\theta)}{\partial \xi}
\end{array}\right]^{\prime} \\
H(\theta)=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
\frac{\partial^{2} l(\theta)}{\partial \mu^{2}} & \frac{\partial^{2} l(\theta)}{\partial \mu \partial \sigma} & \frac{\partial^{2} l(\theta)}{\partial \mu \partial \xi} \\
\frac{\partial^{2} l(\theta)}{\partial \mu \partial \sigma} & \frac{\partial^{2} l(\theta)}{\partial \sigma^{2}} & \frac{\partial^{2} l(\theta)}{\partial \sigma \partial \xi} \\
\frac{\partial^{2} l(\theta)}{\partial \mu \partial \xi} & \frac{\partial^{2} l(\theta)}{\partial \sigma \partial \xi} & \frac{\partial^{2} l(\theta)}{\partial \xi^{2}}
\end{array}\right]
\end{gathered}
$$

and the index $t$ denotes iterations for $t=1,2, \ldots$
Notice that the Hessian matrix is symmetric (i.e., $H=H^{T}$ ). The final forms of the elements of $g(\theta)$ and $H(\theta)$ are given by Joe in an unpublished technical report [33]. We decided to verify the derivation of all derivatives needed to calculate the MLE's, where the case of $\xi \neq 0$ is considered in the derivation.

Let $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots, Y_{n}$ be a sequence of independent and identically distributed random variables that follow the GEVD with the CDF defined in equation 3.1 for $\xi \neq 0$. Therefore, the common probability density function (PDF) can be written as:

$$
f_{Y}(y ; \mu, \sigma, \xi)=\frac{1}{\sigma}\left[1+\xi \frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} e^{-\left[1+\xi \frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}}
$$

defined on $1+\xi\left(\frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right)>0$ for $\xi \neq 0, \mu \in(-\infty, \infty)$ is the location parameter , $\sigma>0$ is the scale parameter, and $|\xi|>0$ is the shape parameter.

Thus, the likelihood function for $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots, Y_{n}$ is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
L(\mu, \sigma, \xi) & =\Pi_{i=1}^{n} f_{Y_{i}}\left(y_{i} ; \mu, \sigma, \xi\right) \\
& =\Pi_{i=1}^{n} \frac{1}{\sigma}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} e^{-\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}} \\
& =\frac{1}{\sigma^{n}}\left[\Pi_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\right] e^{-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}} \\
& =\frac{1}{\sigma^{n}}\left[\Pi_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\right] e^{-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $z_{i}=\frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}$.
Then, the log-likelihood is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
l(\mu, \sigma, \xi)=-n \log \sigma-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\frac{1}{\xi}} \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the elements of the gradient are:

$$
\frac{\partial l}{\partial \mu}=\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-1}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}
$$

$$
\frac{\partial l}{\partial \sigma}=-\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-1} z_{i}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial l}{\partial \mu}= & \frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-1} z_{i} \\
& +\frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}-\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\frac{1}{\xi}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and the Hessian matrix elements are:

$$
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \mu^{2}}=\frac{\xi(\xi+1)}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-2}-\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \mu \partial \sigma}= & -\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-1}+\frac{\xi(\xi+1)}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-2} z_{i} \\
& +\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}-\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \mu \partial \xi}= & \frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-1}-\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-2} z_{i} \\
& +\frac{1+\xi^{-1}}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}-\frac{1}{\xi^{2} \sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \sigma^{2}}= & \frac{n}{\sigma^{2}}-2 \frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-1} z_{i}+\frac{\xi(\xi+1)}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-2} z_{i}^{2} \\
& +\frac{2}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}-\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}^{2} \\
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \sigma \partial \xi}= & -\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-2} z_{i}^{2}+\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-1} z_{i} \\
+ & \frac{1+\xi^{-1}}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}^{2}-\frac{1}{\xi^{2} \sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) z_{i} \\
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \xi^{2}}= & \left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-2} z_{i}^{2}-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}^{2} \\
& +\frac{2}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-1} z_{i}-\frac{2}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i} \\
& +\frac{2}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) z_{i}-\frac{2}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) \\
& +\frac{2}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\frac{1}{\xi}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)-\frac{1}{\xi^{4}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}\left(\log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right)^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The MLE's are calculated numerically according to equation 3.5 using R. Due to the poor behavior of the likelihood function of the GEVD, the procedure requires the initial values of the three parameters to be chosen deliberately close to the final estimated values. Otherwise, the estimation process may diverge in some cases [33]. Since Gumbel distribution is a special case of the GEVD and can be obtained by letting $\xi \longrightarrow 0$, Castillo et al. [11] suggested using the MLE formulas of the location and scale parameters of Gumbel distribution to estimate $\mu_{0}$ and $\sigma_{0}$, respectively, and set $\xi_{0}:=0$ to initiate the iterative estimation process. This could be an easy way to
determine the initial values of $\theta$. However, coding experience shows that it is very unusual to end up with an empirical distribution with $\hat{\xi}_{M L E} \approx 0$. Hence, setting $\xi_{0}:=0$ may not lead to convergence always. Accordingly, we think that solving the mean, the variance, and the skewness, which are given in equations $3.2,3.3$, and 3.4 , receptively, would provide a more logical selection of the starting points. Solving these equations requires calculating the mean, $\bar{Y}$, the variance, $S_{Y}^{2}$, and the skewness, $\hat{\eta}_{3}$ from an observed sample. Here, the coefficient of skewness is the third standardized central moment and is defined as follows:

$$
\eta_{3}=\frac{E(Y-E(Y))^{3}}{\left[E(Y-E(Y))^{2}\right]^{3 / 2}}
$$

and it can be estimated as follows [42]:

$$
\hat{\eta}_{3}=\frac{n \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(y_{i}-\bar{y}\right)^{3}}{(n-1)(n-2) S_{Y}^{3}}
$$

where

$$
S_{Y}^{2}=\frac{1}{n-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(y_{i}-\bar{y}\right)^{2}
$$

Next, we use the uniroot function in $R$ to obtain the root of equation 3.7 below:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{sgn}(\xi) \frac{g_{3}-3 g_{1} g_{2}+2 g_{1}^{3}}{\left(g_{2}-g_{1}^{2}\right)^{3 / 2}}-\hat{\eta}_{3}=0 \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

The root of equation 3.7 only exists when we assume $\xi<\frac{1}{3}$. This root will be used in the Newton-Raphson algorithm as $\xi_{0}$. To obtain $\mu_{0}$ and $\sigma_{0}$, we solve equation
3.2 for $\mu$, and equation 3.3 for $\sigma$, respectively, to get the following formulas:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sigma_{0} & =\sqrt{\frac{S^{2}}{g_{2}-g_{1}^{2}} \xi_{0}^{2}} \\
\mu_{0} & =\bar{Y}-\left(g_{1}-1\right) \frac{\sigma_{0}}{\xi_{0}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $g_{1}$ and $g_{2}$ are calculated using $\xi_{0}$.
Finally, the approach of selecting the initial values described above does not assure convergence of the Newton-Raphson algorithm always. Therefore, we might need to adjust the initial values $\left(\hat{\theta}_{0}\right)$, or the value of $\hat{\theta}_{s}$ for $s<t$, manually until we achieve the convergence [33]. A further modification to the estimation algorithm is recommended by Prescott and Walden [49] and by Otten and Van Montfort [47]. The adjustment, which involves adding an optional correction step to the analytical estimation process, was mainly proposed to reduce the number of iterations required to achieve the maximum of the likelihood and to increase the chance of convergence.

We write our own $R$ code to compute the MLE's of the GEVD. The code involves using the library EnvStats [42] to call the function Skewness required to calculate the skewness of the sample. The results of our code are compared to the output of the function fitdist from the library fitdistrplus [19], which can be used to obtain the MLE of the GEVD. Both codes are supplemented with the same set of initial values produced from the mechanism described earlier. Despite returning the same MLE's, both codes fail to converge in some cases, especially when the number of permuted statistics is less than 20. In our code, we impose some constraints on the value of $\hat{\theta}_{s}$ for $s<t$ within the algorithm to reduce the chance of divergence by keeping the value of $\hat{\theta}_{s}$ under control.

### 3.4 Utilizing The GEVD in OQMDR Algorithm

As mentioned earlier, the GEVD has been used to assess the significance of the proposed interactions as a time-efficient replacement to the regular permutation testings procedure in some MDR-based algorithms [48, 30]. Since we are optimizing over many $t$-test statistics, we think that employing the GEVD in the OQMDR algorithm would likely benefit the efficiency of model assessment. That is, the GEVD can be used to approximate the behavior of the maximized testing $t$-score. To do this, we generate a relatively small number of permuted samples and report the permuted maximized testing $t$-score from each permutation. The number of permuted data sets needed to estimate the approximated distribution of the optimized test statistic could be as low as 20 permuted data sets [48], or 50 permuted data sets [30] instead of the 1000 permuted data sets we used in chapter 2 .

To proceed with the calculation, assume we have a data set of size $n$. And let $Y$ be the continuous response variable of interest in the data set, and let $N$ be the total number of genetic factors in the data set. The selection of the final model process is going to be similar to the approach described in chapter 2; therefore, we will skip directly to the model assessment component of the algorithm. Let $t_{k}^{*(0)}$ be the testing $t$-score of the proposed $k$-way interaction when computed from the original data set, for $k=2,3, \ldots, N-1$. Now, define $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ to be the largest order statistic of the random variable $T_{k}^{*(0)}$, i.e.:

$$
T_{k_{\max }^{*}}^{*(0)}:=\max \left(T_{2}^{*(0)}, T_{3}^{*(0)}, \ldots, T_{N-1}^{*(0)}\right)
$$

Since $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ is a maximum of a sequence of random variables, we assume that the GEVD would be a plausible approximation to model the behavior of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$. To estimate the approximated null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$, we permute the original data set $m$
times and re-perform the OQMDR algorithm on each of the permuted data sets to get $t_{k_{\max }}^{*(1)}, t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(2)}, \ldots, t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(m)}$. Next, we apply the numerical estimation algorithm described earlier in equation 3.5 on the permuted sample of $t$-scores $\left(t_{k_{\max }}^{*(1)}, t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(2)}, \ldots, t_{k_{\max }}^{*(m)}\right)$ to obtain the MLE's of the parameters characterizing the null distribution of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$. Once we are done estimating the GEVD parameters, we can calculate the approximated $p$-value of $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ as follows (cf. Hua et al., 2010 [30]):

$$
p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}=1-F_{T_{k_{\max }^{*}}^{*(0)}}\left(t_{k_{\max }^{*(0)}}^{*(0)} ; \hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\max }^{*(0)}}^{*(0)}}, \hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\max }^{*(0)}}}, \hat{\xi}_{\left.t_{k_{\max }^{*(0)}}\right)}\right)
$$

where $F_{T_{k_{\max }^{*}}^{*(0)}}$ is the GEVD distribution function of the random variable $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ evaluated at $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}=t_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$, and $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}}, \hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}}$, and $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}}$ are the MLE's of the parameters of the GEVD of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$.

Next, we need to justify the validity of $p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$, which can be done by approximating the null distribution of $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$. Since $p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)} \in(0,1)$ and is a monotone decreasing function of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$, we thought we could consider following Hua et al. [30] and utilizing the GEVD again to approximate the distribution of $-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$ in order to verify the validity of the computed $p$-value. However, based on numerical investigation, the GEVD doesn't seem to be an appropriate choice to approximate the distribution of $-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)$ in our case. Therefore, we tested a few other distributions to find the best fit for the null distribution of $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)},-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$, and $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$. We tested uniform and beta distributions for $P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$, Weibull and GEV distributions for $-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$, and GEVD for $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$. Among all considered distributions and transformations, GEVD for $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ appears to be the best choice per the graphical representation of the simulated data. Notice that because $p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ is monotone decreasing in $t_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$, the transformation $-\log \left(-\log \left(p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ is monotone decreasing in $t_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$. The reason why we consider the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ transformation
is because typically the null distribution of the $p$-value is uniform $(0,1)$. Therefore, since we know that $p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)} \in(0,1)$, we can assume that the null distribution of $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ is approximately uniform $(0,1)$. Hence, under this assumption, the random variable $-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$ would follow the exponential distribution with a scale parameter $\sigma=1$. Now, since the exponential distribution is a special case of Weibull distribution with a shape parameter $\mu=1$ and a scale parameter $\sigma=1$, we may assume that the random variable $-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$ is distributed as $\operatorname{Weibull}(1,1)$ [10]. Subsequently, the $\log$ transformation (so as the $-\log$ transformation) of a $\operatorname{Weibull}(1,1)$ random variable follows Gumbel distribution, which is a special case of the GEVD when $\xi \rightarrow 0$ [10]. To see this, let $X \sim \operatorname{Weibull}(\mu, \sigma)$ with the CDF defined as follows:

$$
F_{X}(x ; \mu, \sigma)=1-\exp \left(-\frac{x}{\sigma}\right)^{\mu} \text { for } x>0 ; \mu, \sigma>0
$$

Now, let $Y=g(X)=\mu\left(1-\sigma \log \frac{X}{\sigma}\right)$. Since $Y$ is a monotonic decreasing transformation on $X$, the CDF of $Y$ can be obtained using the monotone transformation formula [10]. That is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
F_{Y}(y) & =1-F_{X}\left(g^{-1}(y)\right) \\
& =1-F_{X}\left(\sigma \exp \left(-\frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right)^{\frac{1}{\mu}}\right) \\
& =\exp \left[-\frac{\sigma \exp \left(-\frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right)^{\frac{1}{\mu}}}{\sigma}\right]^{\mu} \\
& =\exp \left[-\exp \left(-\frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right)\right] \text { for } y \in \mathbb{R} ; \mu, \sigma>0
\end{aligned}
$$

The latter form of $F_{Y}(y)$ is the CDF of the Gumbel distribution as defined in equation 3.1. Therefore, the GEVD, which includes Gumbel distribution as a particular case, would be a plausible candidate to describe the behavior of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$.

The preceding described assessment can be practically done by applying the OQMDR algorithm on $m_{1}$ permuted data sets to get $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(1)}, p_{k_{\max }}^{(2)}, \ldots, p_{k_{\max }}^{\left(m_{1}\right)}$. Then, this permuted sample of minimized $p$-values is used to approximate the null GEV distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ using the multivariate Newton-Raphson method for parameter estimation defined in 3.5. The final assessment of $p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ is given in the form:

$$
p_{v}=F_{V}\left(v ; \hat{\mu}_{v}, \hat{\sigma}_{v}, \hat{\xi}_{v}\right)
$$

where $V=-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right), \hat{\mu}_{v}, \hat{\sigma}_{v}$, and $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ are the MLE's of the location, the scale, and the shape parameters of the distribution of $V$, respectively, and $p_{v}$ is the CDF of $V$ calculated at $v=-\log \left(-\log \left(p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$.

Finally, the $p$-value $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ of the model with $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ is considered statistically significant if $p_{v} \leq 0.05$.

A simulation study will be discussed in the next section to demonstrate the described assessment approach and compare the result to our finding in chapter 2.

### 3.5 Numerical and Graphical Assessments

In this section, we regenerated all data sets of the first four cases from section 2.3 to carefully examine the modified component of the OQMDR algorithm. The simulation process is performed in R using the same mechanism that we described in chapter 2. That is, the two alleles' frequencies that are used to generate the factors' information are $p=q=0.5$. Similarly, we generated the continuous response using one of the models described in equations 2.3 and 2.4 , depending on the desired order of interaction. Then, we applied the modified approach on each of the 120 simulated data sets of cases $1-4$ described in sections 2.3.1, 2.3.2, 2.3.3, and 2.3.4 to evaluate
the effectiveness of the suggested GEVD procedure for assessing the significance of the proposed models. Furthermore, a comparison between the permutation testings and the GEVD procedures, in terms of the statistical significance and calculation time, is carried out for all simulated data sets.

For each generated data set, the described approach in equation 3.5 is employed to estimate the null GEVD of the testing $t$-score of the final model, $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$, using $m$ permuted testing $t$-scores, where $m$ is a relatively small number of permuted samples. Coding experience shows that a permuted sample of any size less than 30 might cause the analytical estimation process of the MLE's to diverge more frequently. In details, the m permuted $t$-scores $\left(t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(1)}, t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(2)}, \ldots, t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(m)}\right)$ are utilized to estimate the location, the scale, and the shape parameters of the GEVD using our own written R program. The outputs are verified with the results obtained by applying the function fitdist from the library fitdistrplus [19] on the same permuted samples.

In addition to obtaining the MLE's, we established a graphical representation of the empirical and theoretical null distributions of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$. The graphical representation comprises four different plots: a histogram with empirical and theoretical densities' curves overlaid, empirical and theoretical cumulative probabilities against quantiles plot (CDF plot), a quantile-quantile (Q-Q) plot, and a probability-probability (P-P) plot. The plotted empirical and theoretical densities are obtained using the functions density from $R$ based library, and dgevd from the library EnvStats [42], respectively. Similarly, the CDF curves are produced using the function cdfcomp from the library fitdistrplus [19], with the function pgevd from the library EnvStats [42]. Furthermore, the Q-Q plot, which plots the quantiles of the empirical distribution against the quantiles produced from the theoretical distribution [13], is schemed using the function qqplot from $R$ based library, with the function qgevd from the library EnvStats [42]. Finally, the P-P plot, which compares the empirical CDF versus the theoretical CDF [13], is created by sketching the empirical cumulative probabilities against the
probabilities from the theoretical CDF. Notice that the empirical cumulative probabilities in the CDF plots and the P-P plots are calculated using (1:m-0.5)/m, where $m$ is the number of permuted statistics [19, 42]. Due to space limitations, the graphs are plotted only for one data set for each case and a distinct sample size $(A B \& n=500, A B \& n=1000, \ldots, A B C \& n=2000)$. The graphical representations are produced for the same selected data sets with 1000 permuted $t$-scores to justify the selection of the GEVD to model the behavior of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ for large numbers of permutations.

Analogous to $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$, the null GEVD of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ is approximated using $m_{1}$ permuted $p$-values $\left(p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(1)}, p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(2)}, \ldots, p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{\left(m_{1}\right)}\right)$. The estimated parameters of the null distributions are reported for each of the transformed $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ that corresponds to a certain $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ in various data sets corresponding to a given case. In addition, the four-plot schemes (see previous paragraph) are carried out for selected set of samples. The probability plots are initially produced from $m_{1}$ permuted $p$-values, whit $m_{1}$ being a relatively small number, such that each permuted $p$-value is originated from a distinct permuted sample of size $m$. Later, a larger number of permuted $p$-values is considered to generate the plots. Moreover, we fit a set of different distributions of $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ or a transformation of $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ to compare to the GEVD of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right.$, and the result is partially presented in the appendices. The approximated null distributions of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ and $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ are utilized to determine the significance of the calculated $t$-score, $t_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$. Finally, the results from this simulation study are compared to the findings in chapter 2 regarding calculation time and significance of suggested models. All simulations are done using R software [50] installed in a machine powered by an Intel Core i7-4500u CPU.

### 3.5.1 Case 1: True model $=A B$

Refer to section 2.3.1, the same ten generated data sets of each sample size (500, 1000, and 2000) are used again to evaluate the modification of the OQMDR algorithm. The summarized outputs are listed in tables 3.1, 3.2, and 3.3. Similar to the regular permutation testing, all proposed models show a statistical significance at $\alpha=0.05$ regardless of the sample size. It can be seen by looking at the $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ values in each table. In addition, the GEVD assessment of these $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ 's is carried out and the final theoretical $p$-values are listed under the $p_{v}$ column. Once again, all $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ 's are considered significant at $\alpha=0.05$ level of significance except for one case when $n=2000$ (case 8, table 3.3), where the MLE approach fails to converge even after trying many different initial values.

Table 3.1: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 11.7287 | 0.1945 | 1.0630 | 0.2844 | 0.0071 | -0.1564 | 1.2699 | 0.2295 | 0.0239 | 29.6343 | 0.000 | 29.6763 |
| 2 | 10.0317 | -0.1092 | 1.1286 | -0.1420 | 0.0000 | 0.5375 | 0.9291 | 0.1437 | 0.0000 | 30.6164 | 0.000 | 30.3414 |
| 3 | 9.2992 | -0.2410 | 0.9569 | -0.3926 | 0.0000 | -0.1275 | 1.2581 | -0.0058 | 0.0000 | 28.6911 | 0.000 | 31.4487 |
| 4 | 10.1738 | -0.0730 | 1.2086 | -0.1575 | 0.0000 | 0.1610 | 1.1165 | -0.0390 | 0.0000 | 30.0305 | 0.000 | 32.0555 |
| 5 | 8.8108 | -0.0071 | 1.1363 | -0.2591 | 0.0000 | -0.1611 | 0.6310 | 0.209 | 0.0000 | 29.8299 | 0.002 | 30.6594 |
| 6 | 9.4734 | 0.1556 | 1.3150 | -0.3104 | 0.0000 | -0.1160 | 0.9250 | 0.2105 | 0.0000 | 28.8816 | 0.001 | 32.1799 |
| 7 | 9.3303 | 0.0202 | 1.3270 | -0.0583 | 0.0001 | 0.5502 | 1.1931 | 0.1403 | 0.0000 | 28.2546 | 0.000 | 31.0413 |
| 8 | 11.8964 | -0.0357 | 0.9912 | -0.0356 | 0.0000 | 0.0684 | 1.0479 | 0.1989 | 0.0000 | 29.7952 | 0.001 | 29.8212 |
| 9 | 11.9762 | -0.1403 | 0.9967 | 0.1082 | 0.0004 | 0.2656 | 1.1461 | 0.0801 | 0.0001 | 30.5986 | 0.000 | 29.6083 |
| 10 | 10.0830 | -0.1037 | 1.2199 | -0.0105 | 0.0002 | -0.0284 | 1.0644 | 0.0063 | 0.0005 | 30.7604 | 0.002 | 31.1963 |

* Column headers are defined as follows:
- $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ : The maximized testing $t$-score for the proposed model of the $k^{t h}$ order, calculated from the original data set.
- $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\max }^{*(0)}}}$ : The MLE of the location parameter of the null GEVD of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ observed at $t_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$.
- $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}}$ : The MLE of the scale parameter of the null GEVD of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ observed at $t_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$.
- $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\max }^{*}}^{*(0)}}$ : The MLE of the shape parameter of the null GEVD of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ observed at $t_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$.
- $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ : The theoretical $p$-value of $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ obtained from the null GEVD of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$.
- $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ : The MLE of the location parameter of the null GEVD of $V$ observed at $v$.
- $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ : The MLE of the scale parameter of the null GEVD of $V$ observed at $v$.
- $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ : The MLE of the shape parameter of the null GEVD of $V$ observed at $v$.
- $p_{v}$ : The theoretical $p$-value of $p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ obtained from the null GEVD of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$.
- Time: The required time to apply the algorithm on each data set in minutes.
- $p$-value: The simulated $p$-value from the regular permutation testing.

The graphical representation (figures 3.1 and 3.2) compares the empirical behavior of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ with the theoretical GEVD when $n=500$. Looking at figure 3.1, where only 30 permuted $t$-scores are used to approximate the distribution, all four plots show a decent fit between the empirical distribution and the theoretical GEVD of $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$. In fact, the fit between the two PDFs may not look ideal when we look at the histogram with PDF curves; However, this lack of fit is likely due to the small number of permuted statistics used to establish the fit. Besides the slight deficiency between the two PDF curves, there is not a considerable migration from the fit that can be
spotted from the other three plots. Likewise, figure 3.2 provides a better evidence to deem the GEVD as a plausible choice to explain the variation in $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$. Further, the Q-Q plot shows a minor migration from the 45-degree reference line on the right tail of the distribution, which also agrees with the long right tail shown in the histogram. This slight departure from the fit on the right tail is due to observing a few large quantiles, as we can see from the CDF plot. Other than that, it seems there is no doubt that $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ behaves approximately per the GEVD, which can be inferred by looking at the P-P plot.

Figure 3.1: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 for details. The histogram with the empirical PDFs shows how the empirical distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ looks like compared to the theoretical GEVD. The Q-Q plot reveals whether there is any shifting in location or scale between the two distributions, and detects outliers. The empirical and theoretical CDFs plot displays the nature of the empirical CDF compared to the theoretical CDF. The P-P plot shows whether there is a departure from the fitted GEVD or not [13].

Figure 3.2: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

On the other hand, the graphical comparison between the empirical distribution and the theoretical GEVD of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ is presented on figure 3.3 with $m_{1}=30$ permuted $p$-values, and on figure 3.4 with $m_{1}=500$ permuted $p$-values, respectively. Originally, we considered multiple different transformations and/or distributions besides the GEVD of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$. It turns out that the GEVD of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ does a decent job explaining the variation in the response compared to other considerations, especially for small number of permuted $p$-values $\left(m_{1}=30\right)$. Keep in mind that the generated distribution of the $p$-values is somehow affected by the generated distribution of the permuted $t$-scores because each per-
muted $p$-value is originated from a particular permuted sample of $t$-scores; Hence, we might not have a smooth fit unless we simulate a large enough number of permuted $t$-scores in the first place ( $m \geq 30$ ). That explains why we observe a distinguishing smooth fit in figure 3.4 compared to the fit in figure 3.3. For the same reason, we considered different numbers of permuted $t$-scores and $p$-values with many different scenarios to detect the permutation size that provides enough information to maintain a remarkable fit.

For a fact, we still need to choose a relatively small number of permutations to retain a reasonable calculation time. Therefore, the time of calculation and the precision of fit are the main two elements that we kept in mind when we decide which size is ideal. Subsequently, the approximation in figure 3.3 is done using $m_{1}=30$ permuted $p$-values, such that each $p$-value is originated from a set of $m=30$ permuted $t$-scores, which is what we ended up choosing after many simulation attempts. To examine the behavior of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ for large number of permutations, we also tested a multiple different large numbers of permuted $p$-values that are generated from a fairly small number of $t$-scores. Among the ones we considered, which are (40, $200),(50,200),(50,500),(60,400)$, and $(200,200)$ for the number of permuted $t$-scores $(m)$ and the number of $p$-values $\left(m_{1}\right)$, respectively. Simulation experience shows that a set of size $m \geq 50$ permuted $t$-scores is enough to produce a well behaved $p$-value (smoothly follow the fit). Accordingly, we considered using $m=50$ with $m_{1}=500, m=60$ with $m_{1}=400$, or $m=200$ with $m_{1}=200$ to closely examine the nature of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$.

Figure 3.3: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.4: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Afterward, the figures 3.3 and 3.4 clearly show that the GEVD is a legitimate choice to approximate the distribution of the transformed $p$-value. In fact, the selected transformation of the $p$-value better facilitates the GEVD compared to other transformations.

On the contrary, increasing the original sample size (the number of individuals in the data set) from 500 to 1000 or 2000 did not help improving the precision of the estimation process nor the quality of the fitting. Indeed, as we increase the sample size, the divergence problem of the MLE process becomes more frequent than when $n=500$, which might seem counterintuitive. However, the ambiguity will be
revealed if we recall that the testing $t$-score tends to be proportional to the square root of the sample size; thus, as $n$ increases, outliers become more influential on the fitting process. Therefore, we encountered a divergence problem in about $10 \%$ of the cases when $n=1000$, and about $30 \%$ of the cases for $n=2000$. Anyhow, we overcome the divergences in the Newton-Raphson algorithm by suppressing the value of the estimated shape parameter, $\hat{\xi}_{t}$, from getting larger than $1 / 3$ within each iteration until we reach a complete convergence. Notice that the permuted $p$-values are inversely related to the $t$-scores; therefore, we expected to encounter a more frequent divergence while approximating the distribution of the transformed $p$-values. After all, the suppression adjustment does help achieving the convergence in almost all problematic cases ( 16 out of 17 different data sets of sizes 1000 and 2000) except for one data set of size 2000 (see table 3.3).

Table 3.2: Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=1000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*}}^{*(0)}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*}}(0)}$ | $p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 16.2091 | -0.0445 | 1.1873 | -0.0985 | 0.0000 | 0.2032 | 1.3173 | -0.0360 | 0.0000 | 40.6546 | 0.000 | 44.0068 |
| 2 | 14.9832 | 0.2131 | 1.1328 | 0.2649 | 0.0035 | -0.1580 | 1.1380 | -0.0532 | 0.0225 | 40.3236 | 0.000 | 43.4187 |
| 3 | 16.8702 | 0.2045 | 1.3272 | -0.5083 | 0.0000 | 0.0750 | 1.1692 | -0.1453 | 0.0000 | 40.3071 | 0.000 | 43.2199 |
| 4 | 16.1570 | 0.2231 | 1.5331 | -0.3267 | 0.0000 | 0.1361 | 0.8681 | 0.0778 | 0.0000 | 43.517 | 0.0 | 42.8729 |
| 5 | 15.740 | 0.0244 | 1.2803 | -0.2479 | 0.0000 | -1.6937 | 1.8093 | -0.1436 | 0.0000 | 38.81 | 0.0 | 42.4825 |
| 6 | 14.3067 | 0.0222 | 0.8995 | 0.1408 | 0.0002 | 0.2123 | 0.9702 | -0.1482 | 0.0004 | 38.7839 | 0.000 | 42.3103 |
| 7 | 15.7926 | -0.1886 | 1.0923 | -0.1232 | 0.0000 | 0.7177 | 1.2127 | -0.3567 | 0.0000 | 38.8247 | 0.000 | 42.3003 |
| 8 | 14.7499 | 0.2934 | 1.3505 | -0.2286 | 0.0000 | -0.0187 | 1.2324 | -0.0194 | 0.0000 | 38.7957 | 0.000 | 42.1112 |
| 9 | 15.1977 | -0.0190 | 1.3157 | -0.2970 | 0.0000 | -0.2423 | 0.9008 | 0.0811 | 0.0000 | 40.2208 | 0.000 | 42.2298 |
| 10 | 13.6602 | -0.2700 | 1.1455 | -0.1818 | 0.0000 | -0.3651 | 1.9043 | -0.2396 | 0.0000 | 38.9530 | 0.000 | 42.0930 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

Either way, even though increasing the sample size adds a little bit of complication to the estimation process, it does not worsen the the quality of fitting besides to the increased chance of having more influential extreme values. This can be seen by looking at figures 3.5 and 3.6 for the approximated distribution of the $t$-score, and 3.7 and 3.8 for the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$. Similarly, we have a reasonable fit when $n=2000$ for both the $t$-score and the transformed $p$-value (see figures 3.9, 3.10, 3.11, and 3.12).

It's important to point out that, in some cases, we have some permuted $p$-values are practically equal to zero, which would make the $\log$ transformation undefined for some $p$-values. Accordingly, we add an infinitesimal quantity to the zero $p$-values before applying the transformation. The Q-Q plot in figure 3.12 shows three points at the very bottom end of the $45^{\circ}$ reference line, where these points are originally zero $p$-values. These values do not influence or change the approximated distribution substantially because usually there is a tiny number of them, plus they are not too far in distance from other permuted $p$-values.

Figure 3.5: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.6: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.7: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.8: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 400 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Finally, and probably most importantly, even though the suggested GEVD approach successfully helps to evaluate the proposed models that agree with the underlying interactions used to generate the data, the new proposal does not benefit, compared to the ordinary permutations method, the calculation time aspect of the OQMRD, which is opposed to what we anticipated. This can be inferred by comparing the calculation times between the GEVD and the regular permutations from tables 3.1, 3.2, and 3.3. Yet, after digging deeper into what caused the new procedure to fail dominating the original assessment technique, we come out with a few elements that could influence the calculation time aspect of the GEVD procedure.

Besides coding complication of the new approach compared to the permutation procedure, we think that the leading cause of raising the calculation time is the evaluation of the $p$-value of the examined model. This component has been added to the algorithm, after introducing the GEVD approach, to make a rigorous decision about the reliability of the chosen model. In fact, the assessment of the $p$-value portion of the GEVD proposal absorbs an enormous amount of time compared to the test score evaluation, i.e., obtaining the $p$-value itself. Although it's possible, the regular permutation procedure does not validate the $p$-value of the suggested model because it would consume a tremendous amount of time (re-permute the 1000 permutations many times to obtain the null distribution of the $p$-value).

On the other hand, the GEVD approach can provide a more accurate p-value than the permuted $p$-value. That is, the permuted $p$-value can be reported up to three decimal places only; whereas, the new approach can provide a $p$-value as small as $2.225074 E-308$, which is the machine epsilon in $R$, yet no additional time is needed. However, in our simulation, we rounded all outputs to four decimal places for the sake of space limitation. Once again, to obtain a more exact permuted $p$-value, we need to permute the original data set beyond 1000 times, which in turn would exceedingly increase the computation burden.

Another aspect that influences the computation time is the selection of the GEVD over uniform $(0,1)$ distribution to evaluate the $p$-value, which is inspired by Hua et al., 2010 [30]. That is, if we assume that $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ follows a continuous uniform $(0,1)$ distribution, then we wouldn't need to estimate the null GEVD of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$, which ingests about $95 \%$ of the calculation time. This assumption seems to be reasonable to some extent, particularly when the number of the permuted $p$-values is large enough $\left(m_{1}>400\right)$. With this intention, we graphically examined the behavior of $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ with respect to the uniform $(0,1)$ distribution, and the results is briefly presented in the appendix. From the output presented in this chapter and in the
appendix, we certainly can presume that the GEVD of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ surpasses other considered distributions when the number of the permuted $p$-values is relatively small $\left(m_{1}=30\right)$. However, the performance of the uniform $(0,1)$ distribution, contrary to the other fitted distributions, enhanced substantially with larger number of permuted samples. In addition, if we utilize the uniform $(0,1)$ distribution to evaluate the observed value of $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$, then the observed value of $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ numerically matches its $p$-value in up to more than ten decimal places, which agrees with the Probability Integral Transformation principle of a standard uniform random variable [10]. In short, employing a uniform $(0,1)$ distribution seems feasible as it helps reducing the computation time; however, it has to be done with caution, specifically for small number of permuted samples.

Under those aforementioned circumstances, we think that the suggested GEVD assessment is still predominating the regular permutation testing approach in terms of time and precision. However, further investigation might lead to a more efficient approach to evaluating the selected interactions.

Table 3.3: Case 1: True model $=A B$, and $n=2000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*}(0)}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 20.8692 | -0.4323 | 1.2426 | -0.1523 | 0.0000 | 0.1250 | 0.9952 | -0.0963 | 0.0000 | 61.8658 | 0.000 | 59.3812 |
| 2 | 22.1992 | 0.4960 | 1.4690 | -0.5333 | 0.0000 | -0.1322 | 1.2277 | 0.2275 | 0.0000 | 61.3719 | 0.000 | 59.7195 |
| 3 | 23.0960 | 0.1785 | 1.0632 | -0.1225 | 0.0000 | 0.4089 | 1.2740 | -0.2172 | 0.0000 | 60.0602 | 0.000 | 59.8337 |
| 4 | 22.2190 | 0.5902 | 1.6001 | -0.4643 | 0.0000 | -0.4802 | 1.2874 | -0.0896 | 0.0000 | 59.4864 | 0.000 | 60.8675 |
| 5 | 23.7884 | 0.3335 | 1.5638 | -0.2755 | 0.0000 | -0.3527 | 1.0300 | 0.1059 | 0.0000 | 59.5922 | 0.000 | 59.7674 |
| 6 | 23.3298 | -0.0323 | 1.0901 | -0.0872 | 0.0000 | -0.0283 | 1.3411 | -0.2265 | 0.0000 | 59.7866 | 0.000 | 59.8626 |
| 7 | 22.3034 | 0.1401 | 1.1893 | -0.2912 | 0.0000 | 0.0336 | 1.2075 | 0.0470 | 0.0000 | 59.6857 | 0.000 | 59.6379 |
| 8 | 22.9130 | 0.5555 | 1.3248 | -0.3482 | 0.0000 | NA | NA | NA | NA | 59.2123 | 0.000 | 59.7593 |
| 9 | 22.7459 | -0.0507 | 1.3052 | -0.1459 | 0.0000 | -0.0840 | 1.2365 | -0.3177 | 0.0000 | 59.4446 | 0.000 | 59.8364 |
| 10 | 22.0691 | -0.0590 | 1.2525 | -0.1865 | 0.0000 | -0.1803 | 0.9519 | 0.1870 | 0.0000 | 59.3913 | 0.000 | 59.9434 |

[^0]Figure 3.9: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.10: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.11: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.12: Case 1: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.


### 3.5.2 Case 2: True model $=A B D$

Once again, we regenerated the data sets that we used in section 2.3.2, where the underlying interaction is $A B D$, to evaluate the modification of the OQMDR algorithm. We listed all results in tables 3.4, 3.5, and 3.6.

The results in table 3.4 show that $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ of the suggested model from the ninth data set is not significant $\left(p_{v}=0.0736>0.05\right)$. Whereas, the same interaction is considered significant when evaluated using the regular permutation testing. While this issue could occur more often with small samples, yet the real issue is not the model evaluation procedure itself. It's, in fact, the selected risk pattern from this data set
does not coincide with the true risk pattern used to generate the data (figure 2.5). Knowing that the proposed risk pattern is chosen from both algorithms, QMDR and OQMDR, which means that the issue is from the data generation in the first place. Recall that a 3rd-degree interaction has 27 different allele combinations; hence, we might end up with very few observations in some combinations, which would affect the risk status of individuals in these combinations. Accordingly, the proposed risk pattern could be misleading under such circumstances. As a matter of fact, the GEVD approach does not recognize this risk pattern as a valid risk pattern, while the conventional approach does. This could be considered as a strength favoring the GEVD approach; however, we would need to do more investigation for confirmation.

Table 3.4: Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=500$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}(0)}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {ma }}}^{*(0)}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{m a}(0)}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 10.5026 | 0.4516 | 1.1913 | -0.1902 | 0.0000 | -0.1173 | 0.9337 | -0.0489 | 0.0000 | 29.7165 | 0.000 | 29.4977 |
| 2 | 14.0163 | 0.4222 | 1.3083 | 0.0014 | 0.0000 | -0.1447 | 0.9801 | 0.0328 | 0.0000 | 28.8601 | 0.001 | 29.4172 |
| 3 | 12.8563 | 0.2675 | 1.1150 | -0.1480 | 0.0000 | 0.0555 | 1.0197 | 0.0295 | 0.0000 | 28.7999 | 0.001 | 29.4198 |
| 4 | 11.3547 | 0.2179 | 1.0836 | 0.0603 | 0.0003 | -0.1761 | 0.8652 | 0.0385 | 0.0000 | 28.8446 | 0.000 | 29.3971 |
| 5 | 9.8944 | -0.3290 | 1.0816 | 0.1321 | 0.0022 | -0.3280 | 0.9294 | 0.1096 | 0.0030 | 28.7975 | 0.002 | 29.3120 |
| 6 | 10.1203 | 0.2842 | 0.8315 | -0.0255 | 0.0000 | -0.2759 | 1.4626 | 0.0160 | 0.0057 | 28.8144 | 0.001 | 29.4565 |
| 7 | 12.3105 | 0.7376 | 1.3469 | -0.5025 | 0.0000 | 0.1243 | 0.9594 | 0.0521 | 0.0000 | 28.7748 | 0.001 | 30.4116 |
| 8 | 8.1019 | 0.5767 | 1.6743 | -0.6075 | 0.0000 | 0.1750 | 1.6290 | -0.0849 | 0.0000 | 28.8483 | 0.001 | 29.8514 |
| 9 | 8.2252 | -0.4021 | 1.1873 | 0.2409 | 0.0149 | 0.1759 | 1.6697 | -0.0146 | 0.0736 | 29.6636 | 0.005 | 29.4499 |
| 10 | 12.2139 | 0.4257 | 1.0817 | -0.1678 | 0.0000 | 0.4180 | 1.2153 | -0.3737 | 0.0000 | 30.1630 | 0.000 | 29.5340 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

On the other hand, similar to case 1, all graphs show that the GEVD is nicely approximating the distributions of both $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ and $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$. Once again, changing the sample size doesn't have any noticeable influence on the quality of fitting. Similarly, the order of the examined interaction does not affect the approximation process, which can be inferred by comparing the output of this case with case 1 results.

Figure 3.13: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.14: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.15: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.16: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Table 3.5: Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=1000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*}}^{*(0)}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 15.1322 | -0.0821 | 1.2545 | -0.2901 | 0.0000 | -0.0012 | 0.9089 | 0.1936 | 0.0000 | 39.6350 | 0.000 | 39.3132 |
| 2 | 17.3736 | -0.1201 | 0.9489 | -0.0843 | 0.0000 | 0.2674 | 0.9975 | 0.1897 | 0.0000 | 39.3425 | 0.000 | 39.1848 |
| 3 | 15.2270 | -0.0243 | 1.3561 | -0.3010 | 0.0000 | -0.1651 | 1.3763 | -0.0733 | 0.0000 | 39.9399 | 0.000 | 40.3263 |
| 4 | 16.6369 | 0.1515 | 1.3768 | -0.4173 | 0.0000 | 0.1778 | 1.1726 | -0.1029 | 0.0000 | 42.3773 | 0.000 | 39.1652 |
| 5 | 16.5188 | 0.0180 | 1.3193 | -0.1383 | 0.0000 | -0.2254 | 0.8843 | 0.2302 | 0.0000 | 41.7511 | 0.000 | 39.1250 |
| 6 | 14.8783 | 0.6393 | 1.2252 | -0.3503 | 0.0000 | -0.2497 | 0.8293 | 0.2476 | 0.0000 | 40.7742 | 0.000 | 39.1751 |
| 7 | 16.3628 | 0.5519 | 1.4818 | -0.3753 | 0.0000 | 0.2564 | 1.0828 | 0.0534 | 0.0000 | 42.1615 | 0.000 | 39.0741 |
| 8 | 16.8883 | 0.0523 | 1.2285 | 0.0091 | 0.0000 | 0.1017 | 1.2990 | -0.1449 | 0.0025 | 41.1971 | 0.000 | 39.1690 |
| 9 | 15.0487 | 0.0027 | 1.1268 | -0.2555 | 0.0000 | -0.2092 | 0.8168 | 0.1044 | 0.0000 | 40.5250 | 0.000 | 39.1192 |
| 10 | 16.6091 | 0.1178 | 1.2885 | -0.3730 | 0.0000 | -0.0452 | 1.2771 | 0.0162 | 0.0000 | 41.9034 | 0.000 | 39.2857 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

Figure 3.17: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.18: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.19: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.20: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Table 3.6: Case 2: True model $=A B D$, and $n=2000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\max }^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*}}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 21.6356 | 0.3843 | 1.2571 | -0.2417 | 0.0000 | 0.1747 | 1.5326 | -0.1341 | 0.0000 | 60.6626 | 0.000 | 61.0031 |
| 2 | 22.2545 | 0.3189 | 1.3060 | -0.2431 | 0.0000 | -0.0167 | 0.9431 | 0.3275 | 0.0000 | 60.6943 | 0.000 | 59.9010 |
| 3 | 22.5347 | 0.0560 | 1.2461 | -0.2748 | 0.0000 | 0.3476 | 0.9832 | 0.3668 | 0.0000 | 59.9240 | 0.000 | 60.6521 |
| 4 | 23.6509 | 0.1157 | 1.2808 | -0.0871 | 0.0000 | -0.0634 | 1.2076 | -0.0828 | 0.0000 | 60.5431 | 0.000 | 59.7909 |
| 5 | 25.3687 | 1.0186 | 1.4955 | -0.4187 | 0.0000 | -0.2790 | 0.9754 | 0.0860 | 0.0000 | 60.7385 | 0.000 | 59.6732 |
| 6 | 24.0497 | 0.9217 | 1.2136 | -0.4777 | 0.0000 | -0.0663 | 0.9990 | 0.0078 | 0.0000 | 60.5031 | 0.000 | 59.8435 |
| 7 | 21.6227 | 0.2589 | 1.0186 | -0.0087 | 0.0000 | -0.3698 | 0.8484 | -0.0006 | 0.0000 | 60.3570 | 0.000 | 60.0786 |
| 8 | 21.9942 | -0.1910 | 1.1896 | 0.0245 | 0.0000 | -0.0330 | 1.0626 | 0.1146 | 0.0000 | 61.4807 | 0.000 | 60.3793 |
| 9 | 22.2720 | 0.2202 | 1.1159 | -0.3454 | 0.0000 | 0.6094 | 1.2382 | -0.0615 | 0.0000 | 60.3046 | 0.000 | 59.7811 |
| 10 | 21.9574 | 0.2130 | 1.4370 | -0.1831 | 0.0000 | -0.0967 | 0.9100 | 0.1297 | 0.0000 | 60.7451 | 0.000 | 59.7573 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

Figure 3.21: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.22: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.23: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.24: Case 2: True model $=A B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 400 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.


### 3.5.3 Case 3: True model $=B D$

Another second degree interaction is considered in this case for additional confirmation of the validity of the GEVD approach. Basically, we applied the GEVD procedure on the data sets simulated in section 2.3.3. Tables $3.7,3.8$, and 3.9 summarize the output from these data sets.

Similar to the previous case, we experience two insignificant proposed interactions when we employ the GEVD to evaluate the suggested models, and it happens only when $n=500$ (see table 3.7, sets 7 and 10). After investigation, we discovered that these two examined models are the only two models that suggested the interaction
$B D$ with the risk pattern shown in figure 2.6 b ; whereas the rest suggested the risk pattern presented in figure 2.6a. Recall that we learned from chapter 2 that the risk pattern shown in figure 2.6a minimizes the MSPE compared to the other risk pattern from 2.6b (see table 2.8), which means, there are better models than the examined ones embedded in these data sets. Therefore, the GEVD procedure might deem these two models as insignificant for that same reason. On the other hand, the regular testing procedure recognizes all interactions as significant, regardless of the proposed risk patterns. Once again, this point could suggest that the GEVD procedure does a better job evaluating the significance of the suggested models compared to the permutation testings.

Table 3.7: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {ma }}(0)}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}(0)}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 12.9882 | 0.7660 | 1.1297 | -0.2731 | 0.0000 | 0.2540 | 0.9493 | 0.0597 | 0.0000 | 29.0405 | 0.000 | 29.5849 |
| 2 | 8.7738 | -0.0150 | 1.1439 | 0.1630 | 0.0068 | 0.6481 | 1.6289 | 0.0551 | 0.0147 | 28.9430 | 0.005 | 29.3935 |
| 3 | 9.1315 | 0.2059 | 1.2138 | -0.2635 | 0.0000 | -0.1481 | 0.8663 | 0.1473 | 0.0000 | 29.0621 | 0.002 | 29.5588 |
| 4 | 7.9738 | 0.2739 | 1.3288 | -0.1470 | 0.0000 | 0.3673 | 0.9211 | 0.0279 | 0.0000 | 30.7999 | 0.004 | 29.6322 |
| 5 | 8.6924 | 0.1631 | 1.0311 | 0.1730 | 0.0059 | -0.1094 | 1.0436 | -0.0665 | 0.0176 | 30.2448 | 0.003 | 33.6082 |
| 6 | 9.8547 | -0.2433 | 1.1950 | 0.0820 | 0.0016 | 0.0563 | 0.9907 | -0.1222 | 0.0034 | 29.6046 | 0.001 | 34.6892 |
| 7 | 5.5904 | 0.1358 | 1.0554 | -0.0452 | 0.0028 | 0.0562 | 1.3315 | -0.5744 | 0.0637 | 29.2609 | 0.006 | 31.6696 |
| 8 | 7.0933 | 0.1428 | 1.1205 | -0.0640 | 0.0004 | -0.0118 | 1.0452 | 0.1023 | 0.0001 | 29.1880 | 0.002 | 30.9975 |
| 9 | 5.3883 | 0.2930 | 0.9601 | -0.1205 | 0.0002 | -0.1909 | 0.6152 | 0.5063 | 0.0000 | 29.2257 | 0.008 | 30.8168 |
| 10 | 7.5865 | 0.1655 | 1.1768 | 0.1325 | 0.0102 | -0.1917 | 1.2223 | -0.2984 | 0.0766 | 29.2464 | 0.002 | 30.7754 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

Finally, the graphical representation did not reveal any noticeable migration from the fit neither for $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ nor for $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ except for a slight lack of fit that could be spotted from a small number of permutations (see the histograms on figures $3.25,3.27,3.29,3.31,3.33$, and 3.35). Besides, the GEVD seems a very reasonable choice to evaluate both $T_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ and $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$.

Figure 3.25: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.26: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.27: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right.$ ) based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.28: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 200 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Table 3.8: Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=1000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\max }^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 11.0682 | 0.7401 | 1.4035 | -0.2022 | 0.0000 | 0.1948 | 1.0660 | -0.0195 | 0.0000 | 43.0924 | 0.000 | 41.9711 |
| 2 | 12.9821 | 0.4320 | 1.4931 | -0.4267 | 0.0000 | 0.1701 | 0.9123 | 0.0147 | 0.0000 | 41.2146 | 0.000 | 40.7905 |
| 3 | 6.3368 | -0.1106 | 1.2203 | -0.0767 | 0.0011 | -0.0537 | 1.2973 | -0.1499 | 0.0257 | 40.9804 | 0.000 | 41.7732 |
| 4 | 11.4646 | 0.3605 | 1.1072 | -0.1243 | 0.0000 | 0.0711 | 1.6141 | -0.2356 | 0.0000 | 41.4339 | 0.000 | 42.7985 |
| 5 | 12.9657 | 0.2149 | 1.2809 | -0.2058 | 0.0000 | 0.0209 | 1.0337 | -0.0775 | 0.0000 | 41.6909 | 0.000 | 45.7260 |
| 6 | 11.3902 | -0.0538 | 1.1338 | -0.3668 | 0.0000 | 0.1543 | 1.0346 | 0.0867 | 0.0000 | 44.1730 | 0.000 | 42.0594 |
| 7 | 10.2836 | 0.3404 | 1.0226 | -0.3115 | 0.0000 | -0.0272 | 1.2894 | -0.3138 | 0.0000 | 41.3094 | 0.000 | 42.1066 |
| 8 | 10.0232 | 0.0516 | 1.2395 | -0.0617 | 0.0000 | 0.0135 | 1.3031 | -0.2907 | 0.0120 | 41.6469 | 0.000 | 43.0061 |
| 9 | 8.4548 | 0.1327 | 1.3908 | -0.2435 | 0.0000 | -0.1412 | 0.7047 | 0.2337 | 0.0000 | 41.7274 | 0.000 | 44.0856 |
| 10 | 8.5341 | 0.2593 | 1.4394 | -0.3475 | 0.0000 | -0.5682 | 0.8772 | 0.0597 | 0.0000 | 39.9479 | 0.000 | 42.2784 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

Figure 3.29: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.30: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.31: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right.$ ) based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.32: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Table 3.9: Case 3: True model $=B D$, and $n=2000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*}(0)}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 11.6430 | 0.2859 | 1.1569 | -0.2044 | 0.0000 | -0.1837 | 1.5392 | -0.2311 | 0.0000 | 64.9627 | 0.000 | 64.1316 |
| 2 | 12.2938 | 0.2190 | 1.1905 | -0.2233 | 0.0000 | 0.0688 | 0.9159 | -0.1721 | 0.0000 | 65.1735 | 0.000 | 63.9616 |
| 3 | 14.3724 | 0.1580 | 1.1395 | -0.2001 | 0.000 | 0.1110 | 0.7740 | -0.1198 | 0.0000 | 64.8242 | 0.000 | 63.7335 |
| 4 | 13.5646 | -0.1723 | 1.1201 | -0.3950 | 0.0000 | 0.5113 | 1.4053 | -0.8522 | 0.0008 | 64.2101 | 0.000 | 63.5998 |
| 5 | 19.5815 | -0.0342 | 1.0346 | -0.1840 | 0.0000 | 0.0819 | 0.9170 | -0.0923 | 0.0000 | 62.0592 | 0.000 | 62.5083 |
| 6 | 13.5869 | -0.0984 | 1.3070 | -0.4082 | 0.0000 | -0.3689 | 0.8679 | 0.1498 | 0.0000 | 60.8961 | 0.000 | 62.1566 |
| 7 | 15.2050 | 0.4950 | 1.4679 | -0.6029 | 0.0000 | -0.2058 | 1.3508 | -0.1262 | 0.0000 | 60.8463 | 0.000 | 62.2635 |
| 8 | 15.3370 | 0.3098 | 1.3324 | -0.2556 | 0.0000 | 0.2848 | 1.2500 | -0.2846 | 0.0000 | 60.8577 | 0.000 | 62.1972 |
| 9 | 16.1559 | 0.8818 | 1.3687 | -0.5594 | 0.0000 | 0.2727 | 1.2604 | -0.1606 | 0.0000 | 60.4628 | 0.000 | 62.9126 |
| 10 | 13.7691 | -0.0942 | 1.4842 | -0.2872 | 0.0000 | 0.1223 | 1.2820 | -0.2542 | 0.0000 | 60.4286 | 0.000 | 62.0273 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

Figure 3.33: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.34: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.35: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right.$ ) based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.36: Case 3: True model $=B D, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.


### 3.5.4 Case 4: True model $=A B C$

In this last case, we evaluate the GEVD approach using the generated data sets from section 2.3.4, which uses $A B C$ as the true disease predisposition. The output coincides with the findings from previous cases, which suggest that all proposed models are significant, and the GEVD is a reliable replacement of the permutation testings to study the behavior of the test statistic and its $p$-value.

Table 3.10: Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=500$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\max }^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 9.4425 | 0.5531 | 1.5466 | -0.3279 | 0.0000 | 0.2812 | 0.8262 | -0.1939 | 0.0000 | 30.4723 | 0.004 | 30.0196 |
| 2 | 13.0731 | 0.5741 | 1.1391 | -0.1103 | 0.0000 | 0.0087 | 1.3556 | -0.4597 | 0.0000 | 31.9494 | 0.000 | 31.1732 |
| 3 | 12.1367 | 0.2399 | 1.1930 | 0.1283 | 0.0016 | 0.4865 | 1.3148 | -0.2867 | 0.0146 | 30.3629 | 0.000 | 29.6430 |
| 4 | 10.0161 | 0.5916 | 1.3926 | -0.4213 | 0.0000 | -0.2422 | 1.0116 | 0.1057 | 0.0000 | 30.7973 | 0.002 | 29.6669 |
| 5 | 9.4804 | 0.2371 | 1.2477 | -0.2209 | 0.0000 | 0.1889 | 1.2612 | 0.0570 | 0.0000 | 29.0575 | 0.000 | 29.6187 |
| 6 | 10.0555 | 0.5593 | 1.5019 | -0.5503 | 0.0000 | -0.0829 | 0.8782 | 0.0146 | 0.0000 | 30.8309 | 0.000 | 29.6438 |
| 7 | 9.4207 | -0.1154 | 1.1543 | 0.1353 | 0.0039 | 0.4073 | 1.4548 | -0.4648 | 0.0477 | 29.5905 | 0.003 | 29.6449 |
| 8 | 7.3506 | -0.0983 | 1.2103 | -0.1924 | 0.0000 | 0.0590 | 1.4408 | -0.0593 | 0.0000 | 30.8074 | 0.000 | 31.0272 |
| 9 | 11.3497 | 0.1141 | 1.3360 | -0.3719 | 0.0000 | 0.0325 | 1.3855 | -0.2364 | 0.0000 | 29.0184 | 0.000 | 29.7044 |
| 10 | 12.0756 | 0.2474 | 1.1116 | -0.0975 | 0.0000 | -0.1997 | 0.8700 | -0.0961 | 0.0000 | 28.2528 | 0.000 | 29.5465 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

Figure 3.37: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.38: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.39: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.40: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 200 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Table 3.11: Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=1000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{* *}}^{*(0)}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*}(0)}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 14.8271 | -0.1240 | 1.2508 | -0.2212 | 0.0000 | -0.3596 | 0.9174 | 0.0056 | 0.0000 | 39.0442 | 0.000 | 39.6043 |
| 2 | 16.5818 | 0.1330 | 0.8206 | -0.1821 | 0.0000 | 0.4874 | 1.1700 | 0.1070 | 0.0000 | 39.0856 | 0.000 | 39.5326 |
| 3 | 15.2867 | 0.0679 | 1.1469 | -0.0586 | 0.0000 | 0.0807 | 1.3305 | -0.3509 | 0.0024 | 39.1061 | 0.000 | 39.4339 |
| 4 | 16.6098 | 0.0140 | 1.4397 | -0.0597 | 0.0000 | -0.0767 | 1.0196 | 0.2809 | 0.0000 | 39.0468 | 0.000 | 39.5011 |
| 5 | 14.3892 | 0.1779 | 1.0973 | -0.1218 | 0.0000 | -0.3756 | 1.4787 | -0.3100 | 0.0000 | 39.2719 | 0.000 | 39.4693 |
| 6 | 15.5734 | 0.4229 | 0.8905 | -0.1027 | 0.0000 | 0.0195 | 0.9763 | 0.1767 | 0.0000 | 39.1094 | 0.000 | 39.4865 |
| 7 | 16.8849 | 0.1002 | 1.0957 | -0.1849 | 0.0000 | 0.4833 | 0.9222 | 0.2140 | 0.0000 | 40.3319 | 0.000 | 39.5207 |
| 8 | 15.2774 | -0.6211 | 1.1544 | -0.0600 | 0.0000 | -0.1937 | 1.3755 | -0.1884 | 0.0011 | 39.0103 | 0.000 | 39.5045 |
| 9 | 16.8113 | -0.0017 | 1.1742 | -0.1877 | 0.0000 | 0.0840 | 0.7758 | 0.2378 | 0.0000 | 39.0729 | 0.000 | 39.5146 |
| 10 | 14.0856 | -0.0377 | 1.3131 | -0.6788 | 0.0000 | -0.2527 | 0.9694 | 0.1891 | 0.0000 | 39.0179 | 0.000 | 39.5048 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

Figure 3.41: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.42: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.43: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.44: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 400 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Table 3.12: Case 4: True model $=A B C$, and $n=2000$, and $m=m_{1}=30$

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Set | $t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}(0)}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}}$ | $p_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | Time (min) | $p_{t}$ | Time (min) |
| 1 | 26.5165 | -0.1392 | 1.6560 | 0.3515 | 0.0000 | 0.3468 | 1.0736 | -0.3888 | 0.0000 | 60.9639 | 0.000 | 60.4848 |
| 2 | 23.1537 | -0.4237 | 0.9656 | 0.0246 | 0.0000 | 0.1836 | 1.5028 | 0.4012 | 0.0033 | 60.6772 | 0.000 | 60.4309 |
| 3 | 21.8987 | -0.2714 | 1.5365 | 0.1351 | 0.0000 | 0.5274 | 1.5966 | 0.0936 | 0.0000 | 60.7499 | 0.000 | 60.4446 |
| 4 | 22.9638 | 0.2467 | 1.3306 | 0.4938 | 0.0000 | -0.2975 | 1.5185 | 0.3015 | 0.0000 | 60.9498 | 0.000 | 60.4343 |
| 5 | 20.6543 | 0.4167 | 1.6659 | 0.2720 | 0.0000 | -0.0020 | 1.4295 | 0.1710 | 0.0000 | 61.5221 | 0.000 | 60.5223 |
| 6 | 24.7238 | 0.0681 | 1.1493 | 0.2970 | 0.0000 | 0.1034 | 0.9738 | -0.1946 | 0.0000 | 60.6067 | 0.000 | 60.3343 |
| 7 | 23.5707 | 0.1032 | 1.4913 | 0.2549 | 0.0000 | 0.2271 | 1.0676 | 0.0752 | 0.0000 | 60.4514 | 0.000 | 60.4536 |
| 8 | 22.8113 | 0.3707 | 1.1092 | 0.1829 | 0.0000 | 0.1750 | 1.4578 | 0.3079 | 0.0000 | 60.5447 | 0.000 | 60.4828 |
| 9 | 22.4449 | -0.0021 | 1.1052 | 0.2827 | 0.0000 | 0.0977 | 0.8729 | 0.1447 | 0.0000 | 60.5211 | 0.000 | 60.5020 |
| 10 | 21.8562 | 0.5149 | 1.2811 | 0.4050 | 0.0000 | 0.1427 | 0.9142 | 0.0719 | 0.0000 | 60.7040 | 0.000 | 60.3734 |

* Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

Figure 3.45: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.46: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 1000 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.47: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3.48: Case 4: True model $=A B C, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.


### 3.6 Summary

A GEVD approach of model evaluation on MDR-based approaches was initially proposed by Pattin et al. [48], and then by Hua et al. [30]. An approach was suggested to evaluate the $t$-test statistic in Pattin et al. [48] using 20 permuted data sets; they assumed that the $p$-value is distributed as uniform $(0,1)$. On the other hand, Hua et al. [30] used 50 permuted samples to utilize the GEVD to explain the variation of the $\chi^{2}$ statistic of the $2 \times 2$ contingency table. Further, the GEVD parameters of the $-\log (p)$ were estimated using a set of 50 permuted $p$-values to validate the observed
$p$-value.
In our research, we adapted the GEVD approach to the OQMDR algorithm to assess the significance of the proposed models. After considering several permutation sizes, we deduced that a set of 20 permuted test statistics provides insufficient information to maintain a high chance of convergence when obtaining the MLE's. In contrast, even though using 50 permuted samples could improve the quality of the approximation, it also leads to a substantial inflation in the calculation time. Therefore, we think that a set of 30 permuted $t$-statistics is sufficient to ensure convergence and to produce satisfactory approximation at an acceptable pace. Similarly, a set of 30 permuted $p$-values is used to obtain the MLE's of the approximated distribution of the $p$-value.

From the simulation results, the GEVD is demonstrated to be a plausible choice, compared to other examined distributions in this study, to evaluate the observed $t$ score and its $p$-value. Our study shows that a double logarithmic transformation of the $p$-value fits better than a single logarithm (see the appendix), which was suggested by Hua et al. [30].

On the other hand, the GEVD approach is primarily proposed to reduce the computation burden and enhance the efficiency of the OQMDR algorithm. However, the simulation study did not reveal a significant improvement in this aspect. Regardless, the GEVD procedure increased the precision of the calculated $p$-values, which requires a huge amount of time if the regular permutations are employed. Another consideration is that the evaluation of the $p$-value portion, which consumes about $95 \%$ of the time, seems to be necessary, especially for small number of permutations because our study shows that the assumption of the $p$-value following a uniform $(0,1)$ is invalid for small number of permutations. In addition, the GEVD approach showed a more realistic evaluation than the regular permutations do, specifically, for the cases where wrong risk patterns are selected. However, a further investigation is required
to confirm this feature because it wasn't our primary intention in this study.

Copyright ${ }^{\text {© }}$ Zaid T. Al-Khaledi, 2019.

## Chapter 4 Theoretical Findings

### 4.1 Derivation of MLE's required formulas

In this section we will give a full step-by-step derivation of the first and second derivatives of the log-likelihood function of the GEVD (equation 3.6) with respect to each of its three parameters. The case where $\xi \neq 0$ in equation 3.1 is considered in the derivation. The MLE's of Gumbel distribution (when $\xi \rightarrow 0$ ) are easy to obtain with no further analytical approach needed.

Let $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots, Y_{n}$ be a sequence of independent and identically distributed random variables that follow the GEVD with the CDF defined in equation 3.1 for $\xi \neq 0$. Therefore, the common probability density function (PDF) can be written as:

$$
f_{Y}(y ; \mu, \sigma, \xi)=\frac{1}{\sigma}\left[1+\xi \frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} e^{-\left[1+\xi \frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}}
$$

defined on $1+\xi\left(\frac{y-\mu}{\sigma}\right)>0$ for $\xi \neq 0, \mu \in(-\infty, \infty)$ is the location parameter, $\sigma>0$ is the scale parameter, and $|\xi|>0$ is the shape parameter.

Thus, the likelihood function for $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots, Y_{n}$ is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
L(\mu, \sigma, \xi) & =\Pi_{i=1}^{n} f_{Y_{i}}\left(y_{i} ; \mu, \sigma, \xi\right) \\
& =\Pi_{i=1}^{n} \frac{1}{\sigma}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} e^{-\left[1+\frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}} \\
& =\frac{1}{\sigma^{n}}\left[\Pi_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\right] e^{-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}} \\
& =\frac{1}{\sigma^{n}}\left[\Pi_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\right] e^{-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $z_{i}=\frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}$.
Then, the log-likelihood is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
l(\mu, \sigma, \xi) & =-n \log \sigma-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}} \\
& =-n \log \sigma-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, the first derivative of the log-likelihood function with respect to (w.r.t.) $\mu$ is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial l}{\partial \mu} & =\frac{\partial}{\partial \mu}\left[-n \log \sigma-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}\right] \\
& =0+\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \frac{\xi}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1}-\frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\left(\frac{\xi}{\sigma}\right) \\
& =\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \\
& =\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, w.r.t. $\sigma$ is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial l}{\partial \sigma}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \sigma}\left[-n \log \sigma-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}\right] \\
= & -\frac{n}{\sigma}+\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1} \xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma^{2}} \\
& -\frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma^{2}} \\
= & -\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma} \\
= & -\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally, w.r.t. $\xi$ is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial l}{\partial \xi}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[-n \log \sigma-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)-\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}\right] \\
= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[-n \log \sigma-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)-\sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\frac{1}{\xi} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)}\right] \\
= & 0-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}+\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) \\
& -\sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\frac{1}{\xi} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)}\left[-\frac{1}{\xi}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}+\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i} \\
& -\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)+\frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, differentiating the log-likelihood function w.r.t. $\mu$ twice yields:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \mu^{2}} & =\frac{\partial}{\partial \mu}\left[\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\right] \\
& =\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \frac{\xi}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-2}-\frac{1}{\sigma}\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \frac{\xi}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \\
& =\frac{\xi(\xi+1)}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-2}-\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

And w.r.t. $\sigma$ twice yields:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \sigma^{2}}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \sigma}\left[-\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right. \\
& \left.-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 1^{\text {st }} \& 2^{\text {nd }} \text { terms }=\frac{\partial}{\partial \sigma}\left[-\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right] \\
& =\frac{\partial}{\partial \sigma}\left[-\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1}\left(y_{i}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& =\frac{n}{\sigma^{2}}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-2}\left[\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{2} \\
& -2 \frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1}\left(y_{i}-\mu\right) \\
& =\frac{n}{\sigma^{2}}+\frac{\xi^{2}(\xi+1)}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-2} z_{i}^{2}-2 \frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i} \\
& 3^{\text {rd }} \text { term }=\frac{\partial}{\partial \sigma}\left[-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right] \\
& =-\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}}\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\left[\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{2} \\
& +\frac{2}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma} \\
& =-\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}}\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\left[\xi z_{i}\right]^{2}+\frac{2}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i} \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \sigma^{2}}=\frac{n}{\sigma^{2}}+\frac{\xi^{2}(\xi+1)}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-2} z_{i}^{2}-2 \frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i} \\
& -\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}}\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\left[\xi z_{i}\right]^{2}+\frac{2}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, w.r.t. $\xi$ two times:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \xi^{2}}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}\right. \\
& \left.-\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)+\frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
1^{s t} \& 2^{\text {nd }} \text { terms }= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}-\frac{2}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) \\
& +\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-2} z_{i}^{2}+\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 3^{\text {rd }} \text { term }=\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[-\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right] \\
& =\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[-\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\frac{1}{\xi} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right] \\
& =-\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\frac{1}{\xi} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i} \\
& -\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) e^{-\frac{1}{\xi} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)}\left[-\frac{1}{\xi}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}+\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right] \\
& +\frac{2}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\frac{1}{\xi} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) \\
& =-\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}+\frac{1}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{\xi^{4}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}\left[\log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right]^{2}+\frac{2}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
4^{\text {th }} \text { term }= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[\frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}\right] \\
= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[\frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)} z_{i}\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)} z_{i}\left[-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}+\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right] \\
& -\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)} z_{i} \\
= & -\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}^{2}+\frac{1}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i} \\
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \xi^{2}}= & \frac{2}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}-\frac{2}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)+\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-2} z_{i}^{2} \\
& -\frac{2}{\xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}+\frac{2}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{\xi^{4}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}}\left[\log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right]^{2}+\frac{2}{\xi^{3}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\frac{1}{\xi}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) \\
& -\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \frac{1}{\xi} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, the second derivative of the log-likelihood function w.r.t. $\sigma$ first, then w.r.t. $\mu$ is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \mu \partial \sigma}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \mu}\left[-\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right. \\
& \left.-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1} \\
= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \mu}\left[-\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[\left[\frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1}+\xi\right]^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right] \\
= & -\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[\left[\frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-1}+\xi\right]^{-2}\left[\frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-2}+\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \\
& -\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma} \\
= & -\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-2}+\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \\
& -\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \frac{y_{i}-\mu}{\sigma}
\end{aligned}
$$

And w.r.t. $\xi$ first, then w.r.t. $\mu$ is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \xi \partial \mu}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)}\right] \\
= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)}\right] \\
= & -\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-2} z_{i}+\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} \\
& -\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right) \\
= & \left.-\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-2} z_{i}+\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}+\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right] \\
& +\frac{1}{\sigma}\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}-\frac{1}{\sigma \xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally, w.r.t. to $\sigma$ then for $\xi$ yields:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} l}{\partial \xi \partial \sigma}= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[-\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}\right] \\
= & \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi}\left[-\frac{n}{\sigma}+\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}-\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)} z_{i}\right] \\
= & 0-\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-2} z_{i}^{2}+\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i} \\
& -\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n} e^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)} z_{i}\left[-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i}+\frac{1}{\xi^{2}} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)\right] \\
= & -\frac{\xi+1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-2} z_{i}^{2}+\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-1} z_{i} \\
& +\frac{1}{\sigma}\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(2+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i}^{2}-\frac{1}{\sigma \xi^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[1+\xi z_{i}\right]^{-\left(1+\frac{1}{\xi}\right)} z_{i} \log \left(1+\xi z_{i}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Since the Hessian matrix is symmetric (i.e., $H=H^{T}$ ), therefore, we don't need to derive the remaining three elements. All derived formulas are used in R code to
obtain the MLE's of the GEVD according to the Newton's method (equation 3.5).

### 4.2 Validating the Law of Total Probability on Hau et al. paper [30]

In their simulation study, Hua et al. [30] generated an interaction effect between two of the ten simulated biallelic genetic factors (table 4.1). The association was generated so that no main effect is appreciated.

Table 4.1: The original penetrance of the two factors suggested by Hua et al. [30]

|  |  | Factor $A$ |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $A A$ | $A a$ | $a a$ |  |
| Factor $B$ | $B B$ | $\phi K$ | $\left(1+\frac{p_{1}}{2 q_{1}}(1-\phi)\right) K$ | $K$ |
|  | $B b$ | $\left(1+\frac{p_{1}}{2 q_{1}}(1-\phi)\right) K$ | $\left(1-\frac{p_{1} p_{2}}{4 q_{1} q_{2}}(1-\phi)\right) K$ | $K$ |
|  | $b b$ | $K$ | $K$ | $K$ |

${ }^{*} p_{1}, p_{2}, q_{1}$, and $q_{2}$ are the minor and the major allele frequencies of factors $A$ and $B$, respectively; $K$ is the proportion of individuals with the disease; and $\phi$ is a tuning parameter [30].

Since the entries of table 4.1 represent the disease penetrance on the population, the total probability of acquiring the disease has to add up to $K$, which was defined as the population prevalence. Given that the authors assigned $p_{1}$ and $p_{2}$ as the minor allele frequencies of factors $A$ and $B$, respectively; then, per the Law of Total Probability, the probability of having the disease $(P(D))$ can be calculated as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
P(D)=\sum_{i \in\{A A, A a, a a\}} \sum_{j \in\{B B, B b, b b\}} P(D \mid i j) P(i j) \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the conditional probabilities of disease given a specific multilocus combination $\left(P(D \mid i j)^{\prime} s\right)$ are given in table 4.1 listed earlier; whereas, the joint probabilities of multilocus combinations $\left(P(D \mid i j) P(i j)^{\prime} s\right)$ are defined in table 4.2 below.

Table 4.2: The joint probabilities of disease and multilocus combinations of the two factors per the definition of the authors [30]

|  | Factor $A$ |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $B B$ | $A A$ | $A a$ | $a a$ |
| Factor $B$ | $B B$ | $q_{1}^{2} q_{2}^{2} \phi K$ | $2 p_{1} q_{1} q_{2}^{2}\left(1+\frac{p_{1}}{2 q_{1}}(1-\phi)\right) K$ | $p_{1}^{2} q_{2}^{2} K$ |
|  | $B b$ | $2 q_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}\left(1+\frac{p_{1}}{2 q_{1}}(1-\phi)\right) K$ | $4 p_{1} q_{1} p_{2} q_{2}\left(1-\frac{p_{1} p_{2}}{4 q_{2} q_{2}}(1-\phi)\right) K$ | $2 p_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2} K$ |
|  | $b b$ | $q_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2} K$ | $2 p_{1} q_{1} p_{2}^{2} K$ | $p_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2} K$ |

${ }^{*}$ Refer to table 4.1 for details.

However, the $P(D)$ defined in equation 4.1 cannot add up to $K$ with the given penetrance in table 4.1. We can simply show the contradiction by substituting any set of values of $p_{1}, p_{2}$, and $\phi$. For instance, $K^{-1} P(D)=0.595$ when $p_{1}=p_{2}=0.05$ and $\phi=0.5$, while it should be sum up to 1 . Therefore, we proposed an alteration (tables 4.3 and 4.4) to the penetrance provided in the paper that should fix the imbalances in table 4.1.

Table 4.3: The suggested penetrance of the two factors

|  | Factor $A$ |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $A A$ | $A a$ | $a a$ |  |
| Factor $B$ | $B B$ | $\left(1+\phi p_{1} p_{2}\right) K$ | $\left(1-\phi^{\frac{q_{1} p_{2}}{2}}\right) K$ | $K$ |
|  | $B b$ | $\left(1-\phi^{\frac{p_{1} q_{2}}{2}}\right) K$ | $\left(1+\phi^{\frac{q_{1} q_{2}}{4}}\right) K$ | $K$ |
|  | $b b$ | $K$ | $K$ | $K$ |

[^1]Table 4.4: The joint probabilities of disease and multilocus combinations of the two factors per the definition of the authors [30] and our suggested penetrance

|  |  | Factor $A$ |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $B B$ | $A A$ | $A a$ | $a a$ |
| Factor $B$ | $B B$ | $q_{1}^{2} q_{2}^{2}\left(1+\phi p_{1} p_{2}\right) K$ | $2 p_{1} q_{1} q_{2}^{2}\left(1-\phi^{\frac{q_{1} p_{2}}{2}}\right) K$ | $p_{1}^{2} q_{2}^{2} K$ |
|  | $B b$ | $2 q_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}\left(1-\phi^{\left.\frac{p_{1} q_{2}}{2}\right) K}\right.$ | $4 p_{1} q_{1} p_{2} q_{2}\left(1+\phi^{\left.\frac{q_{1} q_{2}}{4}\right) K}\right.$ | $2 p_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2} K$ |
|  | $b b$ | $q_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2} K$ | $2 p_{1} q_{1} p_{2}^{2} K$ | $p_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2} K$ |

* Refer to table 4.1 for details.

Now, the joint probabilities of disease and multilocus combinations are balanced, and they sum up to $K$ as we can see from the vitrification listed below:

$$
\begin{aligned}
P(D)= & \sum_{i \in\{A A, A a, a a\}} \sum_{j \in\{B B, B b, b b\}} P(D \mid i j) P(i j) \\
= & K\left[q_{1}^{2} q_{2}^{2}\left(1+\phi p_{1} p_{2}\right)+2 q_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}\left(1-\phi \frac{p_{1} q_{2}}{2}\right)+q_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2}\right. \\
& +2 p_{1} q_{1} q_{2}^{2}\left(1-\phi \frac{q_{1} p_{2}}{2}\right)+4 p_{1} q_{1} p_{2} q_{2}\left(1+\phi \frac{q_{1} q_{2}}{4}\right) \\
& \left.+2 p_{1} q_{1} p_{2}^{2}+p_{1}^{2} q_{2}^{2}+2 p_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}+p_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2}\right] \\
\Longrightarrow K^{-1} P(D)= & q_{1}^{2} q_{2}^{2}+\phi p_{1} q_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}^{2}+2 q_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}-\phi p_{1} q_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}^{2}+q_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2} \\
& +2 p_{1} q_{1} q_{2}^{2}-\phi p_{1} q_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}^{2}+4 p_{1} q_{1} p_{2} q_{2}+\phi p_{1} q_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}^{2} \\
& +2 p_{1} q_{1} p_{2}^{2}+p_{1}^{2} q_{2}^{2}+2 p_{1}^{2} p_{2} q_{2}+p_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, recall that $q_{1}=1-p_{1}$ and $q_{2}=1-p_{2}$. So:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& K^{-1} P(D)=\left(1-p_{1}\right)^{2}\left(1-p_{2}\right)^{2}+2\left(1-p_{1}\right)^{2} p_{2}\left(1-p_{2}\right)+\left(1-p_{1}\right)^{2} p_{2}^{2} \\
& +2 p_{1}\left(1-p_{1}\right)\left(1-p_{2}\right)^{2}+4 p_{1}\left(1-p_{1}\right) p_{2}\left(1-p_{2}\right)+2 p_{1}\left(1-p_{1}\right) p_{2}^{2} \\
& +p_{1}^{2}\left(1-p_{2}\right)^{2}+2 p_{1}^{2} p_{2}\left(1-p_{2}\right)+p_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2} \\
& =\frac{1-2{ }^{(1)} p_{2}+\stackrel{(2)}{2}_{2}^{2}-2{ }^{(3)} p_{1}+4 p_{1} p_{2}-2 p_{1} p_{2}^{2}+{ }^{(6)}{ }_{1}^{2}-2 \stackrel{(7)}{(7)} p_{1}^{2} p_{2}+{ }^{(8)} p_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2}}{P(A A B B)} \\
& \frac{\stackrel{(1)}{\stackrel{(2)}{p_{2}}-} \stackrel{{ }^{(4)}}{2 p_{2}^{2}}-4 p_{1} p_{2}+4 \stackrel{(5)}{1}^{(5)} p_{2}^{2}+2 \stackrel{(7)}{p_{1}^{2}} p_{2}-\stackrel{(8)}{p_{1}^{2}} p_{2}^{2}}{P(A A B b)}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& +\frac{4 p_{1} p_{2}-4 p_{1} p_{2}^{2}-4 p_{1}^{2} p_{2}+4 p_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2}}{P(\text { AaBb })}+\frac{2 p_{1} p_{2}^{2}-2 p_{1}^{2} p_{2}^{2}}{P(\text { Aab })}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =1 \\
& \Longrightarrow P(D)=K
\end{aligned}
$$

### 4.3 Theorem: Ordered Combinatorial Partitioning in OQMDR

Assume that we have a data set of size $n$ with a continuous response variable $Y$ and a single categorical covariate with three levels. Therefore, there are three possible Combinatorial Partitionings that can be applied to $Y,\{1\}$ versus $\{2,3\},\{1,2\}$ versus $\{3\}$, and $\{1,3\}$ versus $\{2\}$. Let $n_{i}$ and $\bar{Y}_{i}$; for $i=1,2,3$, be the sample size and the arithmetic mean of the data from the $i^{\text {th }}$ level (or category) of the covariate, respectively. Now, without loss of generality, let $\bar{Y}_{1}<\bar{Y}_{2}<\bar{Y}_{3}$; then, per the Ordered Combinatorial Partitioning principle, $t_{2 \mid 13}<\max \left(t_{3 \mid 12}, t_{23 \mid 1}\right)$, given that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& t_{2 \mid 13}=\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{13}}{\sqrt{\frac{S_{2}^{2}}{n_{2}}+\frac{S_{13}^{2}}{n_{13}}}} \\
& t_{3 \mid 12}=\frac{\bar{Y}_{3}-\bar{Y}_{12}}{\sqrt{\frac{S_{3}^{2}}{n_{3}}+\frac{S_{12}^{2}}{n_{12}}}} \\
& t_{23 \mid 1}=\frac{\bar{Y}_{23}-\bar{Y}_{1}}{\sqrt{\frac{S_{23}^{2}}{n_{23}}+\frac{S_{1}^{2}}{n_{1}}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $n_{i j}, \bar{Y}_{i j}$, and $S_{i j}^{2}$ represent the sample size, the average, and the variance of the combined data from the $i^{\text {th }}$ and the $j^{\text {th }}$ level of the covariate, respectively.

## Proof:

For a more tractable situation, let $n_{1}=n_{2}=n_{3}=\bar{n}$. Also assume that all group variances are equal and known, i.e. $\sigma_{1}^{2}=\sigma_{2}^{2}=\sigma_{3}^{2}=\sigma^{2}$. Hence:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& t_{2 \mid 13}=\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{13}}{\sqrt{\frac{\sigma_{2}^{2}}{n_{2}}+\frac{S_{13}^{2}}{n_{13}}}} \\
& t_{3 \mid 12}=\frac{\bar{Y}_{3}-\bar{Y}_{12}}{\sqrt{\frac{\sigma_{3}^{2}}{n_{3}}+\frac{S_{12}^{2}}{n_{12}}}} \\
& t_{23 \mid 1}=\frac{\bar{Y}_{23}-\bar{Y}_{1}}{\sqrt{\frac{\sigma_{23}^{2}}{n_{23}}+\frac{S_{1}^{2}}{n_{1}}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\bar{Y}_{i j} & =\frac{n_{i} \bar{Y}_{i}+n_{j} \bar{Y}_{j}}{n_{i}+n_{j}} \\
& =\frac{\bar{n}\left(\bar{Y}_{i}+\bar{Y}_{j}\right)}{2 \overline{\bar{n}^{2}}} \\
& =\frac{\bar{Y}_{i}+\bar{Y}_{j}}{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
S_{i j}^{2} & =\frac{\left(n_{i}-1\right) \sigma_{i}^{2}+\left(n_{j}-1\right) \sigma_{j}^{2}+n_{i} \bar{Y}_{i}^{2}+n_{j} \bar{Y}_{j}^{2}-\left(n_{i}+n_{j}\right) \bar{Y}_{i j}^{2}}{n_{1}+n_{2}-1} \\
& =\frac{(\bar{n}-1) \sigma^{2}+(\bar{n}-1) \sigma^{2}+\bar{n} \bar{Y}_{i}^{2}+\bar{n} \bar{Y}_{j}^{2}-(\bar{n}+\bar{n})\left(\frac{\bar{Y}_{i}+\bar{Y}_{j}}{2}\right)^{2}}{\bar{n}+\bar{n}-1} \\
& =\frac{2(\bar{n}-1) \sigma^{2}+\bar{n} \bar{Y}_{i}^{2}+\bar{n} \bar{Y}_{j}^{2}-2 \bar{n} \frac{\bar{Y}_{i}^{2}+\bar{Y}_{j}^{2}+2 \bar{Y}_{i} \bar{Y}_{j}}{4}}{2 \bar{n}-1} \\
& =\frac{2(\bar{n}-1) \sigma^{2}+\bar{n} \bar{Y}_{i}^{2}+\bar{n} \bar{Y}_{j}^{2}-\frac{\bar{n}}{2} \bar{Y}_{i}^{2}-\frac{\bar{n}}{2} \bar{Y}_{j}^{2}-\bar{n} \bar{Y}_{i} \bar{Y}_{j}}{2 \bar{n}-1} \\
& =\frac{2(\bar{n}-1) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{i}^{2}+\bar{Y}_{j}^{2}-2 \bar{Y}_{i} \bar{Y}_{j}\right)}{2 \bar{n}-1} \\
& =\frac{2(\bar{n}-1) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{i}-\bar{Y}_{j}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}-1}
\end{aligned}
$$

Now:

$$
\begin{aligned}
t_{2 \mid 13} & =\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{13}}{\sqrt{\frac{\sigma_{2}^{2}}{n_{2}}+\frac{S_{13}^{2}}{n_{13}}}} \\
& =\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{\sigma^{2}}{\bar{n}}+\frac{2(\bar{n}-1) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
& =\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{2(2 \bar{n}-1) \sigma^{2}+2(\bar{n}-1) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
& =\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& t_{3 \mid 12}=\frac{\bar{Y}_{3}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{2}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{2}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
& t_{23 \mid 1}=\frac{\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}-\bar{Y}_{1}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\bar{n}\left(\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
t_{2 \mid 13} & =\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\overline{2}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
& <\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

follows by $\bar{Y}_{1}<\bar{Y}_{2}<\bar{Y}_{3}$
Therefore:

$$
\begin{aligned}
t_{23 \mid 1}-t_{2 \mid 13} & >t_{23 \mid 1}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{}\left(\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
\Longrightarrow t_{23 \mid 1}-t_{2 \mid 13} & >\frac{\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}-\bar{Y}_{1}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{}\left(\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{}\left(\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}}} \\
= & \frac{\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}-\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{2}+\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{n}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
& =\frac{\bar{Y}_{3}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{2}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\bar{n}\left(\bar{Y}_{2}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
& >0
\end{aligned}
$$

again, follows by $\bar{Y}_{1}<\bar{Y}_{2}<\bar{Y}_{3}$
Similarly:

$$
\begin{aligned}
t_{2 \mid 13} & =\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\overline{2}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{3}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
& <\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\overline{2}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{2}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

follows by $\bar{Y}_{1}<\bar{Y}_{2}<\bar{Y}_{3}$
Therefore:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& t_{3 \mid 12}-t_{2 \mid 13}>t_{3 \mid 12}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{2}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
& \Longrightarrow t_{3 \mid 12}-t_{2 \mid 13}>\frac{\bar{Y}_{3}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{2}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\bar{n}}{}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{2}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{2}-\frac{\bar{Y}_{1}+\bar{Y}_{3}}{2}}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{\overline{2}}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{2}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}}} \\
&=\frac{\frac{3}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{3}-\bar{Y}_{2}\right)}{\sqrt{\frac{(6 \bar{n}-4) \sigma^{2}+\frac{n}{2}\left(\bar{Y}_{1}-\bar{Y}_{2}\right)^{2}}{2 \bar{n}(2 \bar{n}-1)}}} \\
&>0
\end{aligned}
$$

again, follows by $\bar{Y}_{1}<\bar{Y}_{2}<\bar{Y}_{3}$
Hence, $t_{2 \mid 13}<\max \left(t_{3 \mid 12}, t_{23 \mid 1}\right)$.
In fact, under the aforementioned restriction about the equality of group sizes and variances we assumed at the beginning of the proof, we achieved a stronger conclusion than we claimed. That is, we just proved that $t_{2 \mid 13}<\min \left(t_{3 \mid 12}, t_{23 \mid 1}\right)$.

## Chapter 5 Real data analysis

### 5.1 Alzheimer's Disease (AD) overview

Since the beginning of the past century, life expectancy has dramatically increased in the United States. The United States Life Tables of 2004 show a steady positive trend from 1900 to 2004 where life expectancy jumped from 49.24 years in 1900 to 68.07 years in 1950 , then to 77.8 years in 2004 (a total of 28.56 years increase) [4]. As a result, age-related medical conditions became more frequent than before, especially neurodegenerative ${ }^{1}$ issues [52]. Alzheimer's Disease (AD) is one of these neurodegenerative disorders that affects about $10 \%$ of people aged $65+$ years [2]. The disease, which was first identified by the German psychiatrist Alois Alzheimer in 1906 [28], progresses over time causing many mental and physical health complications to patients. Soon after it occurs, AD causes brain cell loss, which leads to brain size shrinkage, which in turn reduces a patient's brain capability to function normally. Consequently, AD patients could face short term memory impairment, talking difficulties, struggling to remember well-known people and places, problems accomplishing daily living and self-care activities, and eventually mental disability and dementia [45]. Thus far, no medical treatment has been proven to help to reverse or suppress Alzheimer's Disease from advancing to late stage; however, some treatment might help reducing the symptoms of $\mathrm{AD}[3]$.

The majority of Alzheimer's Disease cases (about 95\%) occur after age 65 (lateonset). The remaining $5 \%$ of the cases occur in younger people, often after age 30 . On the other hand, about $75 \%$ of Alzheimer's Disease cases occur sporadically (only one patient in a family), which is known as Sporadic Alzheimer's Disease. Whereas,

[^2]$25 \%$ of the cases are family related (multiple cases in one family), which is, therefore, known as Familial Alzheimer's Disease. Most of the early-onset cases are Familial AD. Both types, sporadic AD and familial AD , are believed to be linked to mutations in certain genes or occurrence of certain combinations of genes. Namely, the early-onset AD is linked to mutations in amyloid precursor protein (APP), presenilin 1 (PSEN1), and presenilin 2 (PSEN2) genes. Whereas the late-onset AD is significantly linked with the apolipoprotein $\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{ApoE})$ gene, specifically the ApoE-を4 allele [40, 23].

Besides symptoms, patients of Alzheimer's Disease typically develop some other biochemical characteristics, for instance, significant elevations in the level of the cerebrospinal fluid tau (CSF) and the urine neuronal thread protein (NTP) in patients with AD compared to controls [35]. Many studies have been conducted to investigate connections between AD and genetics [6]. The majority of the studies modeled the relationship between specific gene information and certain measured indicators of AD or comparing the gene expressions in case versus control groups.

In our research, we are interested in investigating an effect of combinations of genetic factors on some continuous response. Therefore, Alzheimer's Disease data set with a continuous biochemical marker would satisfy our need. In fact, we are inspecting the connection between three different continuous measures of cognition impairment and a set of bio-markers that are linked to AD [37]. The data set is explored in details in the next section.

### 5.2 Data presentation

As we pointed out earlier, we are trying to discover a relationship between human cognition and some genetic factors in AD patients. Accordingly, we obtained our data set from the Alzheimer's Disease Neuroimaging Initiative (ADNI: http://adni.loni.ucla.edu/) with help from Dr. David Fardo. The size of the original data set is 612 individuals with 32 measured variables; three of them are continuous responses. These responses
are cognitive resilience (CRs), cognitive reserve (CRv), and global resilience (GRs). In general cognitive resilience refers to the human ability to overcome or resist the negative impacts of specific life circumstances, like poverty [21], family crises [12], and aging-related issues [54]. However, in our data set, the cognitive variables are outcomes of cognitive performance evaluation compared to what is expected, given the underlying pathology and other AD risk factors. Essentially, they are different residuals for cognitive performance after adjusting in various ways [20]. Subjects underwent various neuropsychological assessments, and an overall memory score was derived [9]. The rest of the variables provide information about some environmental (or biological) markers and genetic information.

The effects of all variables but the genetics (except the ApoE-\&4) have been regressed out through multiple linear regression models, and hence the three responses in the given data set represent residuals from each fitted model [20]. Thus, we eliminated all non-gene markers and the ApoE- 84 factor from the data set, which reduces the total number of variables to 25 instead of 32 . Besides, since our proposed method does not handle data sets with missing or unreported gene information, we eliminated all variables that contain 40 or more NA entries from the data set. Finally, we perform the analysis on cases with no missing information only. The exclusion reduces the total number of observations to 480 with 15 variables, in which three of them are responses. The entries of all genetic variables are $\{0,1$, or 2$\}$, which represent allele combinations of each factor. We also use Latin alphabet letters to label all factors for easy presentation. Refer to table 5.1 for details about included and excluded SNPs in the study.

Table 5.1: Genetic-variable list

| SNP | Gene | Missing | Included | Label |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| rs6656401 | CR1 | 118 | No | - |
| rs6733839 | BIN1 | 323 | No | - |
| rs35349669 | INPP5D | 246 | No | - |
| rs190982 | MEF2C | 114 | No | - |
| rs75932628 | TREM2 | 33 | Yes | A |
| rs10948363 | CD2AP | 0 | Yes | B |
| rs2718058 | NME8 | 39 | Yes | C |
| rs1476679 | ZCWPW1 | 65 | No | - |
| rs11771145 | EPHA1 | 0 | Yes | D |
| rs28834970 | PTK2B | 70 | No | - |
| rs9331896 | CLU | 323 | No | - |
| rs10838725 | CELF1 | 1 | Yes | E |
| rs983392 | MS4A6A | 131 | No | - |
| rs10792832 | PICALM | 4 | Yes | F |
| rs11218343 | SORL1 | 7 | Yes | G |
| rs17125944 | FERMT2 | 0 | Yes | H |
| rs17125721 | PSEN1 | 29 | Yes | I |
| rs10498633 | SLC24A4 | 0 | Yes | J |
| rs8093731 | DSG2 | 53 | No | - |
| rs4147929 | ABCA7 | 46 | No | - |
| rs3865444 | CD33 | 0 | Yes | K |
| rs7274581 | CASS4 | 27 | Yes | L |

Refer to table 5.2 and figures 5.1, 5.2, and 5.3 for data exploration of the three response variables in the data set. Recall that these responses are stored as residuals after regressing out the effects of all non-genetic factors and the ApoE- $\varepsilon 4$ from the data set. Also, recall that errors from multiple linear regression models are assumed normally distributed with mean zero and positive standard deviation. Now, from looking at the summary statistics, it seems like all three responses have a mean close to zero and a standard deviation of one. Therefore, it seems like normallydistributed errors is a valid assumption about the responses. However, the medians and the graphical representations suggest that the marginal distributions of the three variables are slightly skewed to the left, which suggests that there might be some non-spotted variation left in the residuals, mainly for the CRv variable. Regardless,
this unexplained variation might not be strong enough to be caught, especially for the CRs and GRs variables, in which their distributions are almost symmetric.

Table 5.2: Statistical summary

| Statistics | Cognitive Resilience | Cognitive Reserve | Global Resilience |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n$ | 480 | 480 | 480 |
| min | -3.2178 | -3.8218 | -3.1058 |
| max | 2.6790 | 1.6232 | 2.4172 |
| range | 5.8968 | 5.4450 | 5.5230 |
| median | 0.0487 | 0.1493 | 0.1160 |
| mean | 0.0315 | -0.0318 | 0.0012 |
| SD | 0.9998 | 1.0032 | 0.9885 |
| middle $95 \%$ | $(-2.3193,1.8280)$ | $(-2.1106,1.4083)$ | $(-2.1610,1.6691)$ |

Figure 5.1: Empirical distribution of Cognitive Resilience compared to Normal distribution


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 5.2: Empirical distribution of Cognitive Reserve compared to Normal distribution


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 5.3: Empirical distribution of Global Resilience compared to Normal distribution


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.


### 5.3 Data analysis

We applied the OQMDR algorithm on the AD data set separately for each response. All possible 2 -way and 3 -way interactions between the genetic factors are examined along with their best risk patterns per the OCP procedure. Refer to tables 5.3 and 5.4 for the output of the analysis.

Table 5.3: Model selection of the three cognitive scores

|  | Best 2-way |  | Best 3-way |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Response | Model | $t_{t_{k}^{*}}^{*}$-score | Model | $t_{k}^{*}$-score | $\overline{\text { MSPE }}$ |
| CRs | CL | 0.1525 | DJL | 0.2373 | 1.0061 |
| CRv | FI | -0.1713 | JKL | 0.2881 | 1.0238 |
| GRs | EG | -0.9722 | DJL | -0.0774 | 0.9948 |

As we can see from table 5.3, the selected 2-way and 3-way models for CRs are (NME8 and CASS4) and (EPHA1, SLC24A4, and CASS4), for CRv are (PICALM and PSEN1) and (SLC24A4, CD33, and CASS4), and for GRs are (CELF1 and SORL1) and (EPHA1, SLC24A4, and CASS4), respectively. Per the OQMDR algorithm, the best final models for all responses are the 3 -way interaction (the one that maximizes the testing $t$-score). The risk patterns for each selected 2 -way and 3 -way interaction are demonstrated in figures 5.4 and 5.5, respectively. However, it's clear from table 5.4 that none of the proposed models are statistically significant.

This could be attributed to one or more of the following issues: First, the sample size is relatively small (480) to make it possible to correctly spot a statistically significant interaction. Second, there is little or no true relationship between the responses and the considered factors from the current data set. Third, the eliminated variables might have heavy influence on the response variables, and are no longer accessible because of the elimination. Fourth, there could be a true relationship but the OQMDR algorithm is not able to catch it.

Table 5.4: Proposed model evaluation

|  | GEVD procedure |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Permutation |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Response | $t_{k_{\max }}^{*(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{t_{k_{\max }^{*}}}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{t_{k_{\text {max }}^{*}}(0)}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{t_{\text {max }}^{*(0)}}$ | $p_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ | $\hat{\mu}_{v}$ | $\hat{\sigma}_{v}$ | $\hat{\xi}_{v}$ | $p_{v}$ | $p$-value |
| CRs | 0.2373 | 0.2139 | 0.4841 | -0.0612 | 0.6144 | 0.1716 | 0.9719 | 0.0930 | 0.5708 | 0.617 |
| CRv | 0.2881 | 0.2872 | 0.7864 | -0.0984 | 0.6317 | 0.0412 | 0.9165 | 0.0078 | 0.6399 | 0.720 |
| GRs | -0.0774 | 0.2282 | 0.5282 | -0.2963 | 0.8483 | -0.1221 | 0.9612 | 0.0544 | 0.8872 | 0.651 |

[^3]Figure 5.4: Risk patterns of the proposed 2-way interactions for each response


Figure 5.5: Risk patterns of the proposed 3-way interactions for each response
(a) Cognitive Resilience

(b) Cognitive Reserve

(c) Global Resilience


* Individuals in highlighted cells are at high risk.

On the other hand, the 3 -way models that the OQMDR selected for the CRs and GRs response are the same (EPHA1, SLC24A4, and CASS4), with the exact same risk pattern (see figure 5.5). Also, two factors (SLC24A4, and CASS4) are chosen to form the 3rd-degree interaction for all three responses. This consistency could be a sign of true but weak interactive effect of the three factors on the cognitive impairment scores, especially because we know that (CASS4) is selected as the most important main effect factor (1-way) for all three scores.

Also, a Principal Components (PC) analysis on the three responses is carried out, and two of the PCs have been selected as alternative formulations of cognitive scores. Then, the OQMDR method is applied to the AD data set with the new responses from each selected PCs (See table 5.5). The third degree interaction (EPHA1, SLC24A4, and CASS4), with the same risk pattern that is selected for CRs and GRs (figures 5.5a and 5.5 c ), has been proposed again as the best final model but it failed to pass the significance assessment once again. Regardless of the insignificance, it's interesting to notice that the output from the PC analysis supports the importance of the selected 3 -way model per the analyzed data set.

Table 5.5: Principal Components analysis

|  | CRs | CRv | GRs | SD | Model $t_{k}^{*}$-score |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| PC1 | 0.5397 | 0.5278 | 0.6559 | 1.5046 | DJL | 0.1474 |
| PC2 | -0.6911 | 0.7227 | -0.0129 | 0.8433 | DJL | -0.1059 |
| PC3 | 0.4808 | 0.4463 | -0.7548 | 0.0008 | - | - |

* The rows in columns CRs, CRv, and GRv represent the eigenvectors of the covariance matrix of the matrix of responses.

Technically, the OQMDR performed decently to examine all possible interactions. The evaluation process is done using $m=30$ permuted test statistics and $m_{1}=$ 30 permuted $p$-values for each response. The MLE estimation procedure failed to diverge in one of the permuted cases of the CRv ; therefore, we approximated the null distribution from $m_{1}=29$ permuted $p$-values only (see figures 5.8 and 5.9). The graphical presentations show that the GEVD well approximated the distribution
of the testing score and the transformed $p$-value; yet, the transformed $p$-values and their $p$-values are close. This suggests that a uniform $(0,1)$ distribution might be a valid assumption about the $p$-values of the test statistic. Both the GEVD and the permutation testings agree about the non-significance of the proposed models, which could explain why the $p$-values of the test statistics and their $p$-values are so close . The evaluations procedure was a bit faster for the GEVD procedure (about 16 hours for the GEVD compared to 17 hours for the regular permutations). Although it's not an enormous enhancement, it might be a positive indication on the GEVD side when there are many interacting factors in the study.

Figure 5.6: Cognitive Resilience; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 5.7: Cognitive Resilience; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 5.8: Cognitive Reserve; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 29 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 5.9: Cognitive Reserve; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 29 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 5.10: Global Resilience; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $T_{k_{\text {max }}}^{*(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $t$-scores


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 5.11: Global Resilience; Graphical representation of the null distribution of $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.


### 5.4 Conclusion

Statistical analysis of the AD data set shows a consistent selection of the (SLC24A4, and CASS4) factors to explain the variation on the cognitive scores. The combination (EPHA1, SLC24A4, and CASS4) is chosen, as the best 3-way interaction, twice with the same risk pattern to model the relationship between genetic factors and patients' cognition. However, the contribution of these factors doesn't seem strong enough to approach statistical significance. Increasing the size of the data set might help for better recognizing the disease disposition. Model selection in OQMDR algorithm seems
to work well choosing the most important interaction among all possible interactions; however, with such a small sample size, the sparsity of some multilocus allele combinations could substantially influence the selection mechanism. Regardless of weak significance of proposed models, the model evaluation component of the OQMDR method satisfactorily approximated the null distributions of the test statistic and the transformed $p$-value, which can be inferred by the graphical representation of the GEV and empirical distributions. Therefore we think that the GEV distribution is an ideal choice for assessing the validity of the interactions.

### 5.5 Further work

In this research, we proposed a new machine learning algorithm, the OQMDR, to handle genetic data sets with continuous trait response. The OQMDR is an adapted combination of the QMDR and the Optimal MDR algorithms [26, 30]. The modification was done by utilizing the concept of the Ordered Combinatorial Partitions (OCP) [46]. The new method shows a legitimate performance compared to QMDR in terms of selecting the most critical risk pattern that minimizes the prediction errors. The performance of the new method is presented in details in chapter 2. A comparison with the QMDR algorithm is carried out also in chapter 2. To enhance the efficiency and the accuracy of evaluation, the permutation testing for model assessment has been replaced with a parametric approach based on extreme value theory in chapter 3. Simulation studies in chapter 2 and chapter 3 exhibited an acceptable practical performance to capture the true models; however, there are some drawbacks of the OQMDR method that could be addressed in future works. One of the drawbacks is that the algorithm shows a poor performance with small size data sets, notably when high order interactions are examined due to the sparsity of information in some combinations. In addition, the OQMDR is vulnerable to missing information (NA), which is a pervasive issue with genetic data set [1]. Another weakness is the inability
to analyze data sets with multiple responses simultaneously. For instance, we might have wished to do the analysis of the AD data set with all responses at once rather than performing three separate analysis. While this could be handled by doing a principal components (PC) analysis to aggregate all responses into one variable and apply the OQMDR on the new variable, a multivariate version of the OQMDR would be an interesting area to investigate in future research.

On the other hand, regardless of its complication, the modified GEVD evaluation component of the OQMDR has higher accuracy, compared to the regular permutation testings, in evaluating the significance of the proposed models and is more efficient under specific considerations. Despite, simplifying the theory-based approach could substantially benefit the efficiency of the algorithm. The simplification could involve revising the analytical MLE approach to lessen the required iterations to achieve convergence, or using a more efficient programming language.

Further, theoretical validation and power estimation studies would strengthen the findings of this research. In addition, utilizing the OCP approach on other MDRbased algorithms, where applicable, might benefit the performance of model selection and reduce the prediction error.

## Appendix

## Presentation of other fitted distributions

In this appendix, we presented some graphical results from chapter 3 for some fitted distributions and/or transformations besides the GEVD of the $-\log \left(-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)\right)$, which was demonstrated earlier in chapter 3 . The case where the underlying interaction is $A B$ with $n=500$ is the only considered case in this appendix.

Figure 1: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null GEVD of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 2: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null Weibull distribution of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 3: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null uniform $(0,1)$ distribution of the $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 4: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null GEVD of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 5: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null Weibull distribution of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 6: True model $=A B, n=500$; Graphical representation of the null uniform $(0,1)$ distribution of the $P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 7: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null GEVD of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 8: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null Weibull distribution of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 9: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null uniform $(0,1)$ distribution of the $P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 10: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null GEVD of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 400 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 11: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null Weibull distribution of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 400 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 12: True model $=A B, n=1000$; Graphical representation of the null uniform $(0,1)$ distribution of the $P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ based on 400 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 13: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null GEVD of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 14: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null Weibull distribution of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\max }}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 15: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null uniform $(0,1)$ distribution of the $P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ based on 30 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 16: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null GEVD of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 17: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null Weibull distribution of the $-\log \left(P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}\right)$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.

Figure 18: True model $=A B, n=2000$; Graphical representation of the null uniform $(0,1)$ distribution of the $P_{k_{\text {max }}}^{(0)}$ based on 500 permuted $p$-values


* The four plots are produced using R. Refer to the second paragraph of section 3.5 and figure 3.1 for details.


## References

[1] Pakeeza Akram and Li Liao. Prediction of missing common genes for disease pairs using network based module separation on incomplete human interactome. BMC genomics, 18(10):902, 2017.
[2] Alzheimer's Association. Alzheimer's and dementia: Prevalence, 2019. URL https://www.alz.org/alzheimers-dementia/facts-figures. [Online; accessed 20-April-2019].
[3] Alzheimer's Association. Alzheimer's and dementia: Treatments, 2019. URL https://www.alz.org/alzheimers-dementia/treatments. [Online; accessed 12-February-2019].
[4] Elizabeth Arias. United states life tables, 2004. National vital statistics reports, 56(9):1-40, 2007.
[5] Lorenzo Beretta, Alessandro Santaniello, Piet LCM van Riel, Marieke JH Coenen, and Raffaella Scorza. Survival dimensionality reduction (sdr): development and clinical application of an innovative approach to detect epistasis in presence of right-censored data. BMC bioinformatics, 11(1):416, 2010.
[6] Thomas D Bird. Alzheimer disease overview. In GeneReviews®[Internet]. University of Washington, Seattle, 2015.
[7] William S Bush, Todd L Edwards, Scott M Dudek, Brett A McKinney, and Marylyn D Ritchie. Alternative contingency table measures improve the power and detection of multifactor dimensionality reduction. Bmc Bioinformatics, 9 (1):238, 2008.
[8] ML Calle, V Urrea, G Vellalta, N Malats, and Kristel Van Steen. Modelbased multifactor dimensionality reduction for detecting interactions in highdimensional genomic data. Technical report, Department of Systems Biology, Universitat de Vic,, 2008.
[9] Elena Carapelle, Laura Serra, Sergio Modoni, Michele Falcone, Carlo Caltagirone, Marco Bozzali, Luigi Maria Specchio, and Carlo Avolio. How the cognitive reserve interacts with $\beta$-amyloid deposition in mitigating fdg metabolism: An observational study. Medicine, 96(16), 2017.
[10] George Casella and Roger L Berger. Statistical inference, volume 2. Duxbury Pacific Grove, CA, 2002.
[11] Enrique Castillo, Ali S Hadi, Narayanaswamy Balakrishnan, and José-Mariá Sarabia. Extreme value and related models with applications in engineering and science. Wiley Hoboken, NJ, 2005.
[12] Bernard Cesarone. Resilience guide: A collection of resources on resilience in children and families. 1999.
[13] John M Chambers. Graphical Methods for Data Analysis. Chapman and Hall/CRC, 2017.
[14] Jiin Choi and Taesung Park. Multivariate generalized multifactor dimensionality reduction to detect gene-gene interactions. BMC systems biology, 7(Suppl 6):S15, 2013.
[15] Stuart Coles, Joanna Bawa, Lesley Trenner, and Pat Dorazio. An introduction to statistical modeling of extreme values, volume 208. Springer, 2001.
[16] James F Crow. Hardy, weinberg and language impediments. Genetics, 152(3): 821-825, 1999.
[17] Hongying Dai, Richard J Charnigo, Mara L Becker, J Steven Leeder, and Alison A Motsinger-Reif. Risk score modeling of multiple gene to gene interactions using aggregated-multifactor dimensionality reduction. BioData mining, 6(1):1, 2013.
[18] Rishika De, Shefali S Verma, Fotios Drenos, Emily R Holzinger, Michael V Holmes, Molly A Hall, David R Crosslin, David S Carrell, Hakon Hakonarson, Gail Jarvik, et al. Identifying gene-gene interactions that are highly associated with body mass index using quantitative multifactor dimensionality reduction (qmdr). BioData mining, 8(1):41, 2015.
[19] Marie Laure Delignette-Muller and Christophe Dutang. fitdistrplus: An R package for fitting distributions. Journal of Statistical Software, 64(4):1-34, 2015. URL http://www.jstatsoft.org/v64/i04/.
[20] David W. Fardo. Private Communication, 2019.
[21] Norman Garmezy. Resiliency and vulnerability to adverse developmental outcomes associated with poverty. American behavioral scientist, 34(4):416-430, 1991.
[22] Generalized extreme value distribution. Generalized extreme value distribution - Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia, 2018. URL https://en.wikipedia. org/wiki/Generalized_extreme_value_distribution. [Online; accessed 10-February-2018].
[23] Genetic and Rare Diseases Information Center (GARD). Alzheimer disease, 2015. URL https://rarediseases.info.nih.gov/diseases/10254/ alzheimer-disease. [Online; accessed 01-March-2019].
[24] Damian Gola, Jestinah M Mahachie John, Kristel Van Steen, and Inke R König. A roadmap to multifactor dimensionality reduction methods. Briefings in bioinformatics, 17(2):293-308, 2016.
[25] Jiang Gui, Jason H Moore, Karl T Kelsey, Carmen J Marsit, Margaret R Karagas, and Angeline S Andrew. A novel survival multifactor dimensionality reduction method for detecting gene-gene interactions with application to bladder cancer prognosis. Human genetics, 129(1):101-110, 2011.
[26] Jiang Gui, Jason H Moore, Scott M Williams, Peter Andrews, Hans L Hillege, Pim van der Harst, Gerjan Navis, Wiek H Van Gilst, Folkert W Asselbergs, and Diane Gilbert-Diamond. A simple and computationally efficient approach to multifactor dimensionality reduction analysis of gene-gene interactions for quantitative traits. PLoS One, 8(6):e66545, 2013.
[27] Muralidhar L Hegde, Anil K Mantha, Tapas K Hazra, Kishor K Bhakat, Sankar Mitra, and Bartosz Szczesny. Oxidative genome damage and its repair: implications in aging and neurodegenerative diseases. Mechanisms of ageing and development, 133(4):157-168, 2012.
[28] Hanns Hippius and Gabriele Neundörfer. The discovery of alzheimer's disease. Dialogues in clinical neuroscience, 5(1):101, 2003.
[29] Jonathan RM Hosking, James R Wallis, and Eric F Wood. Estimation of the generalized extreme-value distribution by the method of probability-weighted moments. Technometrics, 27(3):251-261, 1985.
[30] Xing Hua, Han Zhang, Hong Zhang, Yaning Yang, and Anthony YC Kuk. Testing multiple gene interactions by the ordered combinatorial partitioning method in case-control studies. Bioinformatics, 26(15):1871-1878, 2010.
[31] Graeme D Hutcheson and Nick Sofroniou. The multivariate social scientist: Introductory statistics using generalized linear models. Sage, 1999.
[32] Arthur F Jenkinson. The frequency distribution of the annual maximum (or minimum) values of meteorological elements. Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological Society, 81(348):158-171, 1955.
[33] H. Joe. Estimation of quantiles of the maximum of $n$ observations. Technical report, University of British Columbia, 1985.
[34] Harry Joe. Estimation of quantiles of the maximum of $n$ observations. Biometrika, 74(2):347-354, 1987.
[35] PJ Kahle, M Jakowec, SJ Teipel, H Hampel, GM Petzinger, DA Di Monte, GD Silverberg, H-J Möller, JA Yesavage, JR Tinklenberg, et al. Combined assessment of tau and neuronal thread protein in alzheimer's disease csf. Neurology, 54(7):1498-1504, 2000.
[36] Kyunga Kim, Min-Seok Kwon, Sohee Oh, and Taesung Park. Identification of multiple gene-gene interactions for ordinal phenotypes. BMC medical genomics, 6(2):S9, 2013.
[37] Jean-Charles Lambert, Carla A Ibrahim-Verbaas, Denise Harold, Adam C Naj, Rebecca Sims, Céline Bellenguez, Gyungah Jun, Anita L DeStefano, Joshua C Bis, Gary W Beecham, et al. Meta-analysis of 74,046 individuals identifies 11 new susceptibility loci for alzheimer's disease. Nature genetics, 45(12):1452, 2013.
[38] Kenneth Lange. Numerical analysis for statisticians. Springer Science \& Business Media, 2010.
[39] Xiang-Yang Lou, Guo-Bo Chen, Lei Yan, Jennie Z Ma, Jun Zhu, Robert C Elston, and Ming D Li. A generalized combinatorial approach for detecting gene-by-gene and gene-by-environment interactions with application to nicotine dependence. The American Journal of Human Genetics, 80(6):1125-1137, 2007.
[40] Richard Mayeux and Mary Sano. Treatment of alzheimer's disease. New England Journal of Medicine, 341(22):1670-1679, 1999.
[41] Hao Mei, Deqiong Ma, Allison Ashley-Koch, and Eden R Martin. Extension of multifactor dimensionality reduction for identifying multilocus effects in the gaw14 simulated data. BMC genetics, 6(1):S145, 2005.
[42] Steven P. Millard. EnvStats: An R Package for Environmental Statistics. Springer, New York, 2013. ISBN 978-1-4614-8455-4. URL http://www. springer.com.
[43] Alison A Motsinger-Reif. The effect of alternative permutation testing strategies on the performance of multifactor dimensionality reduction. BMC research notes, 1(1):139, 2008.
[44] Junghyun Namkung, Kyunga Kim, Sungon Yi, Wonil Chung, Min-Seok Kwon, and Taesung Park. New evaluation measures for multifactor dimensionality reduction classifiers in gene-gene interaction analysis. Bioinformatics, 25(3):338345, 2009.
[45] National Institute of Aging. What are the signs of alzheimer's disease? national institute of aging, 2017. URL https://www.nia.nih.gov/health/ what-are-signs-alzheimers-disease. [Online; accessed 12-February-2019].
[46] MR Nelson, SLR Kardia, RE Ferrell, and CF Sing. A combinatorial partitioning method to identify multilocus genotypic partitions that predict quantitative trait variation. Genome research, 11(3):458-470, 2001.
[47] A Otten and MAJ Van Montfort. Maximum-likelihood estimation of the general extreme-value distribution parameters. Journal of Hydrology, 47(1):187-192, 1980.
[48] Kristine A Pattin, Bill C White, Nate Barney, Jiang Gui, Heather H Nelson, Karl T Kelsey, Angeline S Andrew, Margaret R Karagas, and Jason H Moore. A computationally efficient hypothesis testing method for epistasis analysis using multifactor dimensionality reduction. Genetic epidemiology, 33(1):87-94, 2009.
[49] P Prescott and AT Walden. Maximum likelihood estimation of the parameters of the generalized extreme-value distribution. Biometrika, 67(3):723-724, 1980.
[50] R Core Team. R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing. R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria, 2017. URL https:// www.R-project.org/.
[51] Marylyn D Ritchie, Lance W Hahn, Nady Roodi, L Renee Bailey, William D Dupont, Fritz F Parl, and Jason H Moore. Multifactor-dimensionality reduction reveals high-order interactions among estrogen-metabolism genes in sporadic breast cancer. The American Journal of Human Genetics, 69(1):138-147, 2001.
[52] Dennis J Selkoe. Alzheimer's disease: genes, proteins, and therapy. Physiological reviews, 81(2):741-766, 2001.
[53] Digna R Velez, Bill C White, Alison A Motsinger, William S Bush, Marylyn D Ritchie, Scott M Williams, and Jason H Moore. A balanced accuracy function for epistasis modeling in imbalanced datasets using multifactor dimensionality reduction. Genetic epidemiology, 31(4):306-315, 2007.
[54] Robert S Wilson, Carlos F Mendes De Leon, Lisa L Barnes, Julie A Schneider, Julia L Bienias, Denis A Evans, and David A Bennett. Participation in cognitively stimulating activities and risk of incident alzheimer disease. Jama, 287(6): 742-748, 2002.

## Vita

Zaid Tariq Saleh Al-Khaledi<br>Birth Place: Mosul, Iraq.<br>Education

2015 University of Kentucky
Master of Science in Statistics, May 2015
2005 University of Mosul Master of Science in Statistics, July 2005

2002 University of Mosul
Bachelor of Science in Statistics, June 2002

## Academic Positions

2016-2019 Teaching Assistant, University of Kentucky.
2008-2012 Assistant Lecturer, College of Computer Sciences and Mathematics - University of Mosul, Mosul, Iraq.

2005-2008 Assistant Lecturer, Computer and Internet Center - University of Mosul, Mosul, Iraq.

## Other Experience

2010-2012 Internet Core Competency Certification (IC3) Administrator. The Graduate School, University of Mosul, Mosul, Iraq.

2005-2009 Assistant Director - Computer and Internet Center - University of Mosul, Mosul, Iraq.

## Honors and Awards

2019 R.L. Anderson Outstanding Teaching Award, Department of Statistics, University of Kentucky.

2002 Superior Students in Iraq Award - 2nd rank in Statistics, Office of the President, Baghdad, Iraq.


[^0]:    * Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

[^1]:    * Refer to table 4.1 for details.

[^2]:    ${ }^{1}$ Neurodegenerative refers to a degeneration of human brain neurons, which results in a degradation in human cognitive functions [27].

[^3]:    * Column headers are defined as in table 3.1.

